Pazih Texts and Songs

巴宰族傳說歌謠集

by Paul Jen-kuei Li and Shigeru Tsuchida

李壬癸· 土田滋 著

Institute of Linguistics (Preparatory Office)
Academia Sinica
Taipei
November 2002
中央研究院
語言學研究所籌備處
# Pazih Texts and Songs 巴宰族傳說歌謠集

## Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>前言：巴宰語法綱要</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>References 參考書目</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviations 縮寫</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Part One: Pazih Texts 巴宰傳說集</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>A. Pazih Texts Recorded by Paul Li 李壬癸採集</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 1. awi ki paasukuan 阿維的故事 A Story of Awi</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 2. ni awi a paasukuan 阿維的故事 A Story of Awi</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 3. ni awi a paasukuan 阿維的故事 A Story of Awi</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 4. itih a paku paasukuan（鷹鳥名）的故事 The Story of Transforming</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>into an Eagle</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 5. paNapaN 缺了一條腿的美女 A Pretty Girl Missing a Leg</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 6. rakihan ka kiusun u rahuay 孩子被老鷹挾走了 The Child Was Seized</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>by an Eagle</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 7. kiusun rahuay 被老鷹抓走 Seized by an Eagle</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 8. pinatula 捕鰻 Catching an Eel</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>B. Kaxabu Text Recorded by Paul Li 李壬癸在四庄採集</strong></td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 9. 遷移到埔里 Moving to Puli</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>C. Pazih Texts Recorded by Shigeru Tsuchida 土田滋採集</strong></td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 1. 兩個傻人 Two Stupid Men</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text 2. 母豹之愛 The Great Motherly Love</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Text 3. 釣大魚 Catching a Big Fish ................................................................. 104
Text 4. 看風水 Practicing Geomancy .......................................................... 128

D. Pazih Texts Recorded by Erin Asai 浅井惠倫採集 .................................. 139
Text 1. 競爭 Competition ........................................................................... 139
Text 2. 洪水 Flood ...................................................................................... 142
Text 3. 射太陽 Shooting the Sun ................................................................ 152

E. Pazih Text Recorded by Ino 伊能嘉矩採集 .......................................... 160

Part Two: Pazih Songs 巴宰歌謠 ................................................................ 173

A. Pazih Songs in Auran 愛蘭的巴宰歌謠 ................................................. 173
Children's Songs 童謠 .............................................................................. 173
Song 1. tautaukua 螞蟻王 Leader of Ants ..................................................... 173
Song 2. punKN 蟬 Cicadas .......................................................................... 174
Song 3. badi alu 同伴 Friends, Come ........................................................ 174
Song 4. tulala, rapiaw, ayam 欣賞花、蝴蝶、鳥之歌 Flowers, Butterflies, and Birds ................................................................. 176

B. Ritual Songs in Auran 愛蘭的祭典歌 .................................................... 176
Song 1. 大水氾濫後分居 Separation after the Big Flood ............................. 176
Song 2a. mazuah 走標 (完整版) Racing (full version) ................................... 181
Song 2b. mazuah 走標 (短版) Racing (short version) ..................................... 188
Song 3. 新年請客 Entertaining Guests during the New Year ..................... 192
Song 4. 新居落成 Inauguration of a New House ....................................... 198

C. Kaxabu Songs 四庄歌謠 ..................................................................... 201
Song 1. 四庄的傳統生活 Kaxabu Traditional Life ...................................... 201
Song 2. 飲酒歌 Let's Drink .......................................................... 202

Song 3. 祭祖歌 Ayan 1 Ritual Song for Ancestors—Our Origin .................... 203

Song 4. 祭祖歌 Ayan 2 Ritual Song for Ancestors—Christianization ........... 208

Song 5. 祭祖歌 Ayan 3 Ritual Song for Ancestors—Dialogue between Father and Son .................................................. 211

D. Musical Notes 歌譜 .................................................................. 215

Appendix 附錄 ............................................................................. 233

1. Three Ritual Songs of Ayan Recorded by the Japanese ......................... 233
2. The Lord's Prayer .................................................................. 249
3. Pazih Sentences Recorded by Steere in 1873 .................................. 253
4. SAMPLE OF PREVIOUS SCHOLARS’ NOTES ON PAZIH .......... 256
Introduction

Pazih is a plain tribe language formerly spoken in the central-western part of Taiwan, around Fongyuan areas and along the Dajia River. Some Pazih people started to migrate to Puli, Nantou, in the central part of Taiwan in 1825. There were still nine Pazih villages and the language was still actively spoken during the Japanese period (1895-1945). Although the language has become extinct in the original settlement in the western plain, a few old speakers for both dialects, Pazih and Kaxabu, can still be found in Puli areas. It is partially remembered by only a few old people today. The Pazih language will become entirely extinct before long.

Given in this monograph are all the Pazih texts and songs that have been recorded mostly by the authors, but a few by the previous investigators, including Asai, Ino, and Ferguson for texts, and Nomura for three ritual songs. The monograph contains two main parts: Part One gives the texts and Part Two the songs. Given in the appendices are: (1) three ritual songs of ayan recorded perhaps by Nomura during the Japanese period (1895-1945), (2) the Lord’s prayer in Sekhoan by Rev. Ferguson in 1896, (3) Pazih sentences by Steere in 1873, and (4) sample of previous scholars’s field notes for the Pazih language.

The first field investigation of the Pazih language was done by Steere (1874), and then followed by Ino (1897), Ogawa (1922), Asai (1936-37), Ferrell (1970), Tsuchida (1969), Li (1976, 1998, 2000), Lin (1988, 2000), Blust (1999), and Li and Tsuchida (2001). Most of the earlier studies are mainly short wordlists. Only Ino (1 text), Asai (3), Tsuchida (4), and Li (9) have collected texts over a period of a hundred years, 1897-1997. All these texts are now arranged in accordance with the investigators, Paul Li, Shigeru Tsuchida, Erin Asai, Kanori Ino, and in that order. They have been analysed, with word-by-word and free translations in both English and Chinese.

Those texts collected by Ino and Asai were all checked, edited, and corrected, with the help of our Pazih informant, Pan Jin-yu, before they were incorporated in this volume. Among the 17 texts, only two (A Text 6 and C Text 1) have appeared in Li and Tsuchida (2001:369-384), and they are reprinted with minor corrections in this volume. Two

---

1 This study was supported in part with grants for Paul Li from the Academia Sinica, National Science Council (NSC89-2411-H-001-048, NSC90-2411-H-001-027), and Chiang Ching-kuo Foundation for International Scholarly Exchange (RG-002-D-00). Shigeru Tsuchida was supported in part with Grant-in-Aid for Scientific Research on Priority Areas (A) The Japan Ministry of Education, Science, Sports and Culture Endangered Languages of the Pacific Rim (Grant No.12039103). We’d like to thank the anonymous reviewers for their valuable suggestions to improve an earlier version of our manuscripts, and Wen Chyou-chu for providing us with the musical notes for the Pazih songs.

2 The English translation gives morpheme-by-morpheme glosses while the Chinese gives only word glosses. The Chinese translation is for common readers, while the English translation is for those majoring in linguistics.
texts, A Texts 6 and 7, though deal with more or less the same story, they were narrated by
different speakers with different expressions and sentence structures, and so are A Texts 1, 2
and 3.

Pazih songs were first recorded by someone (see Appendix 1 and Sato 1934) at an
uncertain date, followed by various musicians, such as Hsu Chang-hui and Lu Bing-chuan
(1982), and then by Li and Lin (1990), Wu (1998), and Wen (1998). Most of the songs in this
volume have been recorded and transcribed by Li in the past fourteen years. Both the words
and music notes (transcribed by Chyou-chu Wen and Ching-tsai Lin) for all the songs are
presented in this volume. Some of the the songs have appeared in various publications, Li and

The Pazih reference grammar appeared as the Introduction to Pazih Dictionary
compiled by Li and Tsuchida (2001:1-56), so interested readers are referred to it. A shorter
Chinese version appeared in a conference paper by Li (1998). It is, therefore, decided not to
repeat them here but excerpts. Nevertheless, CDs for the recordings of some Pazih texts and
all songs have been prepared to go with this publication. Note that the written texts and tape
recordings are not necessarily identical.

In these texts and songs, phonetic symbols, such as N, ?, and K are used, while in
Pazih Dictionary the romanized letters, ng, ‘, and e are used respectively.

Although the meanings of most grammatical particles are clear and defined in the texts
and songs, a few of them are not clear in some context, such as aa, a?i, ha, hai, hii, i, iu, la, and
na, especially in C Texts 1-4, as recorded by Tsuchida, who tried to transcribe everything as he
heard in the original tape. Most of them seem to be simply nonsignificant hesitating elements
to fill up the time before the next word or sentence appears, but in future studies they may turn
out to be important clues for discourse analysis of spontaneous speech.

To facilitate reading and understanding the Pazih texts and songs in this volume, a brief
sketch of Pazih grammar is given as the following:

1. Phonology

There are four voiceless unaspirate stops /p, t, k, ?/, three voiced stops /b, d, g/, three
voiceless fricatives /s, x, h/, one voiced fricative /z/, three nasals /m, n, N/, two liquids /l, r/, two
semivowels /w, y/, and four vowels /i, u, K, a/. The stops are unreleased in the word-final
position. Among these consonants, /k/ is a free variant between velar [k] and uvular [q],
especially for speakers of the older generation such as Itih and Chen A-jin (Kaxabu), /x/ is a
velar or uvular fricative depending on the individual speakers, /h/ is a pharyngeal fricative, /l/
is a voiced lateral, /r/ is a flap or retroflex (only in word-final position). The glottal stop is
phonemically significant in the Kaxabu dialect, in which /r/ is lost and there is a contrast
between zero and the glottal stop in the word-initial and final position, e.g., azKm ‘new year’; ?azKm ‘stupid’.

The high vowels /i, u/ have their phonetic variants [e, o] respectively when adjacent to /h/ or /rl/, e.g., /pazihi/ [pazeh] ‘self-appellation’, /buhut/ [bohot] ‘squirrel’, /rutuh/ [rotoh] ‘monkey’, /rarung/ [rarong] ‘hole’.

Geminate vowels are phonemic, e.g., rKzaw ‘leisure’ vs. rKKzaw ‘only’.

Table 1. Pazih Consonants and Vowels

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Consonants:</th>
<th>Vowels:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s</td>
<td>x</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>z</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>n</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>y</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Stress always falls on the final syllable.

2. Morphology

2.1 Affixation

Many roots are bound, e.g., adu-, idKm-, KbKt-, ulah-, bisit-, etc. Each of these bound roots must take one of the affixes to occur as a free form. There are a good number of prefixes, but only two infixes (<a> and <in>) and five suffixes (-an, -aw, -ay, -Kn and -i) in Pazih.

Among these affixes, many have invariant forms, including both infixes, <a> ‘progressive’ and <in> ‘perfective’, and all suffixes -an ‘Locative-focus’, -aw ‘Anticipating’, -i ‘Patient-focus, imperative’, except the Patient-focus suffix -Kn ~ -un, which is phonologically conditioned by the preceding vowel. The Agent-focus prefix has several allomorphs: m- ~ ma- ~ mK- ~ mi- ~ mu-, which are mostly lexically conditioned, and only mK- is phonologically conditioned by the following vowel, e.g., mK-kKn ‘to eat’.

2.2 Reduplication

In addition to the special type of reduplicated syllable, there are four other major types of reduplication in Pazih: (1) reduplication of a complete stem except the coda, e.g., zaxi-zaxi ‘rough’, rimu-rimu ‘will-o’-lantern’, maa-tKbK-tKbKr ‘to fight each other with fists’, kani-karit ‘swidden field’, ma-zKpK-zKpKt ‘crowded’; (2) reduplication of the first CV of the stem, e.g., su-suzuk ‘is hiding’; (3) reduplication of the first CV of the stem with the vowel replaced by /al/,
Pazih Texts and Songs

e.g., da-dius ‘spoon’ < dius ‘to scoop’; (4) reduplication of the first CV of the stem with vowel lengthening, e.g. dKK-dKpKx ‘is reading’.

Different types of reduplication may indicate different syntactic functions and/or phonological constraints. Briefly speaking,

a. reduplication of a noun stem indicates plurality, e.g. saw-saw ‘people’ or sa-sa-sa-saw ‘many people’ < saw ‘person’, apu-?apu ‘ancestors’ < apu ‘grandma’, aba-?abas-an ‘middle-aged people’ < abasan ‘siblings’, sa-sa-sKmKr or sKmK-sKmKr ‘much grass’ < sKmKr ‘grass’;

b. reduplication of a stative verb stem indicates intensity, e.g., mu-ziza-zizay ‘very old’ < zizay ‘old’, ma-kari-karit ‘very dry’ < ma-karit ‘dry’, ta-Niti-Niti ‘very angry’ < ta-Niti ‘angry’, m<in>a-baza-baza ‘very knowledgeable’ < ma-baza ‘to know’, t<in>KrKhK-n ‘very black’ < tKrKhKn ‘black’;

c. reduplication of the first CV of a verb stem indicates the progressive aspect or a repetitive action, e.g., di-dius ‘is scooping’, ki-kizu ‘is making a mark’, ri-riix ‘is checking traps’, su-suzuk ‘is hiding’;

d. reduplication of the first CV of a numeral indicates an ordinal, e.g., du-dusa ‘the second’ < dusa ‘two’;

e. reduplication of the first CV of the stem with the vowel replaced by /a/ indicates an instrument (Blust 1998), e.g., da-dius ‘spoon’ < dius ‘to scoop up’, sa-sipKr ‘fishnet’ < sipKr ‘to cast a fishnet to fish’, sa-sapuh ‘broom’ < sapuh ‘to sweep’, a-alKp ‘door’ < alKp ‘to close’, a-ixu ‘oar’ < ixu ‘to row’;

f. reduplication of a disyllabic active verb stem indicates a continuous or repetitive action, e.g., zKrK-zKzKb-i ‘Keep sucking!’ < zKzKp ‘to suck’, maa-bakK-bakKt ‘to hit each other’ < bakKt ‘to hit’, maa-sapa-sapal ‘to join or pile together’ < sapal ‘to join’, maa-tKzK-tKzK ‘to kick each other’ < tKzKk ‘to kick’.

3. Syntax

3.1 Case Markers

Pazih has the following four case markers:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case Marker</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ki</td>
<td>nominative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ni</td>
<td>genitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>di</td>
<td>locative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>oblique</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Most of these case markers are optional. In addition to the four case markers listed above, there is a topic marker ka and a ligature a in Pazih.
3.2 Personal Pronouns

There are four sets of personal pronouns in Pazih:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Neutral</th>
<th>Nominative</th>
<th>Genitive</th>
<th>Locative</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1sg</td>
<td>yaku</td>
<td>aku ~ -ku</td>
<td>naki</td>
<td>yakuan, yakunan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2sg</td>
<td>isiw</td>
<td>siw</td>
<td>nisiw</td>
<td>isawan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3sg</td>
<td>close</td>
<td>mini</td>
<td>mini</td>
<td>iminiyan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dist</td>
<td>isiswa</td>
<td>misiw</td>
<td>nimi</td>
<td>imisiwan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inv</td>
<td>isia</td>
<td>nisia</td>
<td>sia</td>
<td>isaan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1inc</td>
<td>ita</td>
<td>tu</td>
<td>nita ~ ta-</td>
<td>ilaan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1exc</td>
<td>yami, yamin</td>
<td>ami</td>
<td>niam</td>
<td>yamian, yaminan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2pl</td>
<td>imu</td>
<td>mu</td>
<td>nimu</td>
<td>imuan, imunan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3pl</td>
<td>close</td>
<td>yamini</td>
<td>amisiw</td>
<td>yamisiwan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dist</td>
<td>yamisiwa</td>
<td>yamisiw</td>
<td>namisiw</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inv</td>
<td>yasia</td>
<td>nasia</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Most of the pronominal forms in Pazih are derived from Proto-Austronesian; there is only a minor change in the second person singular form: *Su > siw.3 All the pronominal forms are free. There is only one set of short forms, the nominative, which occurs freely in various positions in a sentence.

3.3 Mood, Focus and Aspect

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Agent</th>
<th>Patient</th>
<th>Locative</th>
<th>Referential</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Realis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neu</td>
<td>mu-bakKt</td>
<td>bakKd-Kn</td>
<td>bakKd-an</td>
<td>saa-bakKt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prf</td>
<td>m&lt;in&gt;u-bakKt</td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;akKt</td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;akKd-an</td>
<td>s&lt;in&gt;u-bakKt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prg</td>
<td>baa-bakKt</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-Kn</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-an</td>
<td>saa-ba-bakKt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrealis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fut</td>
<td>baa-bakKd-ay</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-Kn</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-ay</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ant</td>
<td>mu-bakKd-ay</td>
<td>bakKd-aw</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imp</td>
<td>bakKt</td>
<td>bakKd-i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3 The form imisiw 'he, she' shows up as imisu in formal ritual songs of Pazih. Although we do not think imisiw is related to isiw '2sg', yet the change in the form of the third person (imisu > imisiw) is so suggestive that we may infer that the change in the form of the second person su > siw took place fairly recently.

4 Note that the prefix is su- instead of saa- or si-.
3.4 The Focus System in Pazih

Focus is the agreement between the verb derivation (or inflection) and a noun phrase in a sentence. If the Agentive (actor) case is chosen as the subject, it is called Agent-focus (AF); if the Patient is chosen as the subject, it is called Patient-focus (PF); if the Locative is chosen as the subject, it is called Locative-focus (LF); if the Instrument is chosen as the subject, it is called Instrumental-focus (IF). Like many other Formosan languages and western Austronesian languages, Pazih has four types of focus indicated by verb affixes: (1) Agent-focus by mu-, mK-, m-, m, ma or zero; (2) Patient-focus by -Kn or -un, (3) Locative-focus by -an, and (4) Instrumental-focus by sa-, saa- or si- (see Li and Tsuchida 2001 for details).

(1) mu-bakKt rakihan ki aba.
   AF-beat child Nom Dad
   ‘The father beat/is beating a child’

(2) mi-kita akim ba-bakKt rakihan ki abuk.
   AF-see Prg-beat child Nom
   ‘Abuk saw Akim beating a child’

(3) naki a rakihan rapun-un ni hakKzK a saw.
   I/Gen Lig child take care-PF Gen old Lig person
   ‘My child is/was taken care of by an old person’

(4) bakKd-Kn ni sabuN rakihan ka, ma-raxiw lia.
   beat-PF Gen child Top AF-escape Asp
   ‘The child beaten by Sabung has escaped’

(5) pu-batu?-an lia ki babaw daran.
   pave-stone-LF Asp Nom above road
   ‘The surface of the road has been paved with stones’

(6) k<in>KxKd-an ni abua naki a rima.
   Prf-cut-LF Gen my Gen hand
   ‘My hand was cut by Abua’ (lit., my hand was the place where it was cut by Abua, and the cut is still visible)

(7) saa-xK?Kt nuaN ki saris.
   IF-tie cow Nom string
   ‘The string was used to tie a cow’

(8) saa-talKk alaw ki bulayan.
   IF-cook fish Nom pan
   ‘The pan was used to cook fish’

(9) si-tK?KN wazu ni rakihan ki batu.
   IF-throw dog Gen child Nom stone
   ‘The stone was used to throw at a dog by the child’
前言—附：巴宰語法綱要

巴宰族 (Pazih) 是台灣原住民族之一。現存的兩種方言都在埔里鎮採集：一稱 Pazih，主要在愛蘭，另一稱 Kaxabu，在牛眠山、守城份、大湳、蜈蚣崙四庄。這種語言現在已經瀕臨完全絕滅的邊緣。巴宰族的原始社群中心在現在的豐原附近，以大甲溪左右為中心，地理分布頗廣，在日據時代尚有九社。

今日絕大多數的巴宰族人都說台灣閩南語，卻略帶他們自己母語的一些特徵。僅有極少數住埔里附近 80 歲左右的老人對於他們自己的母語仍有一些記憶。據作者所知，目前只有住在愛蘭現年 88 歲的潘金玉老太太稱的上還有不錯的母語能力，可惜她的健康情況似乎欠佳。

本書收錄了所有記錄過的巴宰語文本 (texts) 和歌謠，絕大部分都是作者親自在埔里採集的，只有少數文本和歌謠是前人所採集的，包括淺井惠倫 (1936) 的三篇，伊能嘉矩 (1897) 的一篇，Ferguson (1896) 傳教士的一篇禱告詞，野村氏所藏的三首祭祖歌謠。此外，還有 Steere 最早 (1873) 在烏牛欄所記錄的二十多個句子。這部書主要分為兩部分：前半部是文本，後半部是歌謠。附錄含有四種資料：(一) 野村氏所藏的三首祭歌 aiyen，(二) Ferguson 所翻譯的禱告詞，(三) 美國博物學教授 Steere 所記錄的二十多個句子，(四) 前人所記錄巴宰語田野筆記的手稿影本。把前人的記錄收進本書之前，作者都先跟發音人仔細核對並修訂過的。本書附有部分文本和全部歌謠的 CD，但文本的錄音跟書面記錄有不少

*本研究李壬癸曾獲以下的研究經費補助：中央研究院主題計畫「平埔族與台灣歷史研究」，行政院國家科學委員會 (編號：NSC89-2411-H-001-048, NSC90-2411-H-001-027)，蔣經國國際學術交流基金會 (RG-002-D-‘00)，土田滋曾獲日本文部科學省特定領域研究 (A), 環太平洋「消滅 滅 言語」 緊急調查研究 (編號：12039103)。感謝兩位匿名審查人提供寶貴的修訂和改進意見，溫秋菊副教授和林清財先生分別為巴宰歌謠採譜並提供各首歌謠的五線譜，許淑鈴小姐輸入全部書稿。
出入。


關於巴宰族的歌謠，日據時代伊能嘉矩 (1908:47)、不知名人士先後記錄過巴宰族的祭祖歌詞 ayang。小川研究室所藏的三種歌：(一) 開基之歌，(二) 水災之歌，(三) 水災後人民分居之歌。後來由佐藤 (1934) 整理了原文、註解及大意，在《南方土俗》發表。以上各文獻可惜都沒有附歌譜。李、林 (1990) 合著的就有四庄的歌詞和歌譜。本書收錄了愛蘭和四庄的歌謠並且也都儘量附上歌譜。


為了方便讀者閱讀本書中的各篇文本和歌謠，以下分三節簡略說明巴宰語的音韻、構詞、句法以及若干例句。

第一節 音韻
一、音韻系統：
輔音：
唇音 | 舌尖 | 舌根 | 小舌 | 咽头 | 喉音
--- | --- | --- | --- | --- | ---
清塞音 | p | t | k[~q] | ? |
浊塞音 | b | d | g |
清擦音 | s | X | [x] | [h] |
浊擦音 | z |
鼻音 | m | n | N |
边音 | l |
闪音 | * | [r] |
半元音 | w | y |

元音：

前 | 央 | 後
高 | i | u |
中 | K |
低 | a |

在《巴宰語詞典》中使用羅馬拼音字母 ng, e 等，但在本書中卻使用國際音標的語音符號 N, ?, K 等。

二、發音與語音符號說明：

(1) 四個清塞音 /p, t, k, ?/ 都不送氣，在字尾也都不解阻 (unreleased)，其中 /k/ 代表舌根塞音 [k] 和小舌塞音 [q] 的自由變體。

(2) 三個清擦音 /s, x, h/，其中 /x/ 是小舌擦音 [X]，/h/ 是咽頭擦音 [], /z/ 是和 /s/ 對當的濁擦音。

(3) 詞尾的 -b 清化為 -p，詞尾的 -d 和 -z 都清化為 -t。

(4) /l/ 是閃音或捲舌擦音 (捲舌音只在語詞尾出現)。

(5) 高元音 /i, u/ 在 /h/ 或 /r/ 緊鄰時分別成為中元音 [e, o]。

(6) 重音都落在最後音節。
Pazih Texts and Songs

(7) 四庄的方言有進一步的演變:

(a) 詞尾的邊音都已變成同部位的鼻音: -l > -n。

(b) /r/ 音大都已丟失，並有抵補音長作用。

(c) /d/ 音都已變成 [z] 或齒間濁擦音。

第二節 構詞

一、詞綴

巴宰語許多語根都非自由式，例如 adu-, idKm-, KbKt-, ulah-, bisit-等等。這些語根都必須要有個詞綴 ( 前綴、中綴、後綴 ) 才能成為自由式。前綴有數十種之多，中綴只有兩種 ( <a>, <in>，並以< >符號表示中綴 )，後綴也只有六種 ( -an, -aw, -ay, -Kn, -i )。


二、重疊

巴宰語的重疊有四種主要類型： (一) 除了語詞輔音尾以外，語根的全部重疊，如 zaxi-zaxi ‘粗糙’， kari-karit ‘旱田’， (二) 語根第一音節的重疊，如 su-suzuk ‘正在隱藏’，(三) 語根第一音節的重疊，但元音以 a 取代，如 da-dius ‘湯匙’< dius ‘舀’， (四) 語根第一音節的重疊，元音加長，如 dKK-dKpKx ‘正在閱讀’。

不同類型的重疊可能顯示不同的語法功能或語音限制：
（一）名詞語根的重疊表示複數，如 saw-saw‘許多人’< saw‘人’，sKmK-sKmKr‘許多草’< sKmKr‘草’；
（二）靜態動詞語根的重疊表示‘很’，如 mu-ziza-zizay‘很舊’< mu-zizay‘舊’；
（三）動態動詞語根第一音節的重疊表示動作在進行中或一再重複的動作，如 di-dius‘正在舀’；
（四）數詞語根第一音節的重疊表示序數，如 du-dusa‘第二’< dusa‘二’；
（五）語根第一音節的重疊並且元音以a取代，表示工具，如 da-dius‘湯匙’< dius‘舀’，sa-sipKr‘漁網’，a-ixu‘船槳’< ixu‘划’；
（六）動態動詞語根的雙音節的重疊表示持續或一再重複的動作，如 bakK-bakKt‘一直打’。

第三節 句法

一、焦點系統

巴宰語的動詞焦點變化有這幾種類型：(一) 主事焦點 mu-, mK, mi-, m-, ma- 或 零，(二) 受事焦點 -Kn 或 -un，(三) 處所焦點 -an，(四) 指事焦點 saa- 或 si。由此看來，巴宰語的焦點系統和一般西部南島語以及一些台灣南島語大致相同。

（一）主事焦點（以主事者當主語）

帶主事焦點的動詞表示已發生或正在進行的動作或事件。例如：

1. mu-bakKt rakhan ki aba.
   AF打 孩 主 父

5 李壬癸 (1998)〈巴則海語的格位標記系統〉有較詳細的句法解說和例句。更詳盡和更新的分析，請參見英文版，Li and Tsuchida (2001:1-58)。
6 本文所使用的縮寫符號如下：AF, 主事焦點；BF, 受惠焦點；屬, 屬格；命, 命令式；IF, 工具焦點；IR, 非現實式；連, 連結詞；LF, 處所焦點；處, 處格；主,
父親打小孩。

2. yaku ka ma-baza imisiw ukuazixa mu-puzah
   我 題 AF-知 他 昨天 AF-來
   我知道他昨天來了。

(二) 受事焦點（以受事者當主語）

受事焦點以-Kn（或-un）標示，通常表示已經發生的事，但不是像有的語言（如泰雅、賽德克）表未來。例如：

3. naki a rakihan rapun-Kn ni hakKzKN.
   我的 連 孩 照顧-PF 屬 老
   我的小孩受老人的照顧。

   -un只是-Kn的變異，只出現在前面元音是 u，如 huruhur-un “拖”，如：

4. huruhur-un dua dini lai ki adadumud- a luxud- a isia.
   拖-PF 那裡 這裡 了 主 一隻 連 鹿 連 那
   那一隻鹿被拖來拖去。

(三) 處所焦點（以處所當主語）

處所焦點以-an標示，都指已發生的事件。例如：

5. pubatu?-an lia ki babaw daran.
   鋪石-LF 了 主 上面 道路
   道路上面舖了石子了。

(四) 指事焦點（以工具或受惠者當主語）

台灣南島語言的指事焦點多用 si-，只有布農用 iis-，噶瑪蘭用 ti，巴宰語用 saa-。偶而也用 si-。試比較下列各句所顯示的不同焦點：

6a. mu-xK?Kt nuaN ki yaku.

主格；題，主題；PF，受事焦點；單，單數；複，複數；Q，疑問；Red，重疊。
AF-綁 牛 主 我
我綁牛。

b. xK?Kt-Kn naki lia ki nuaN.
綁-PF 我/属了 主 牛
牛被我綁了。

c. saa-xK?Kl nuaN ki kahuy.
IF-綁 牛 主 樹
樹被用來綁牛。

目前所蒐集到的語料，以 saa-表示工具或受惠者的主動詞並不多。

7. saa-talKk alaw ki bulayan.
IF-煮 魚 主 鍋
鍋用來煮魚。
Pazih Texts and Songs

以 si- 表示工具焦點的僅有一例：
8. si-tK?KN wazu ni rakihan ki batu.
IF-擲 狗 屬 孩 主 石
小孩用石頭丟擲狗。

至於 sas- 和 si- 的區分條件，目前並不清楚。發音人潘金玉 ( 女，83 歲) 認為例句 8 中仍以用 saa-tK?KN 為宜，si-tK?KN 較少用，也有 si-tK?KN-Kn 的形式，表示“已擲過”。

二、焦點與動貌

綜合焦點系統和動貌系統，以語根 bakKt- “打”為例，下表顯示動詞的各種變化形式：

表二、巴宰語動詞變化表

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>主事</th>
<th>事</th>
<th>受事</th>
<th>事</th>
<th>處</th>
<th>所指</th>
<th>事</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>現實式</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>中立式</td>
<td>mu-bakKt</td>
<td>bakKd-Kn</td>
<td>bakKd-an</td>
<td>saa-bakKt</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>完成式</td>
<td>m&lt;in&gt;u-bakKt</td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;akKt</td>
<td>b&lt;in&gt;akKd-an</td>
<td>s&lt;in&gt;u-bakKt</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>持續式</td>
<td>ba-bakKt</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-Kn</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-an</td>
<td>saa-ba-bakKt</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>非現實式</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>未 來</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-ay</td>
<td>ba-bakKd-Kn</td>
<td>baa-bakKd-ay</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>期 待</td>
<td>mu-bakKd-ay</td>
<td>bakKd-aw</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>命 令</td>
<td>bakKt</td>
<td>bakKd-i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

三、格位標記

名詞的格位標記有兩種：一種是人稱代名詞，另一種是非人稱代詞，包括普通名詞、人名、疑問詞等。

巴宰語有以下四個格位標記：
《語言暨語言學》專刊甲種二之二

di 處格  u 斜格
ki 主格  ni 屬格

此外，還有主題標記 ka 以及連結詞 a。以上這些標記大都可以省略。例句如下：

9. aba ka kasibat rakahin mu-dKpKx babizu.
   父 題 教 孩 AF-讀 書
   父親教孩子讀書。

10. aba a paray ka bayaa?-Kn di rakahin lia.
    父 連 錢 題 給-PF 處 孩 了
    父親的錢給了小孩了。

11. mu-puzah ki awi, yaku (ka) kaa-kKn sumay.
    AF-來 主 人名 我 正在吃 飯
    阿維來時，我正在吃飯。

12. ma-baza mu-laNuy ki rakahin
    AF-會 AF-游 主 孩
    小孩會游泳。

13. ma-xibariw kahuy ki yaku.
    AF-賣 柴 主 我
    我賣木柴。

14. ni saw ki umamah.
    屬 人 主 水田
    水田是人家的。

15. padaux inusat ni kalagu ki atun.
    使 喝 酒 屬 人名 主 人名
    佳拉古使阿敦喝酒。

16. isiw taa-tahay u baruzak?
    你 在-殺 斜 豬
Pazih Texts and Songs

你正在殺豬嗎？

如一般語言，主題都出現在句子的開頭，也就是主動詞或謂語之前。主題標記 ka 出現在它所標記的主題名詞之後，有時也可以省略，但在子題之後都會略為停頓。主格標記 ki 可以標記普通名詞、人名、人稱代詞。屬格標記 ni 可以標記普通名詞或人名。換句話說，巴宰語並不分普通名詞和人名。ni 除了標示所有之外，它的主要功能是標示非主事焦點的主事者。

處格 di 標示處所，甚至標示目標。斜格是 u，表示主格、屬格和處格以外的語法關係。至於 a，只是連結兩個名詞之間的從屬關係。它是連接詞 (ligature)，不是真正的格位標記。
主格標記 **ki** 表示有定 (definite)，而 **a** 只是連接詞。試比較兩者的不同：

17a. ni taruat ki babizu.
(這本)書是 Taruat 的。

b. ni taruad- a babizu.
Taruat 的書

四、人稱代名詞

人稱代名詞巴宰語有以下這四套：

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>表一、巴宰語人稱代詞</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>中立式</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yaku</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>isiw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imisiw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imini</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imisiw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>isia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ita</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yami</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yamini</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yamisiw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>yasia</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

由上表可見大部分的人稱代詞都還保留古南島語的同源詞，只有第二人稱單數的元音發生一點變化：*Su > siw。人稱代詞大都是自由式或長式，只有一
Pazih Texts and Songs

套短式的主語。短式的主語大都出現的第二個位置，緊接在謂語之後，這種現象和其他台灣南島語相同，可是也可以出現在句子的不同位置，因此並非真正的後綴 (suffix)，而是依附詞 (clitic)。此外只有一個出現的動詞前的 ta-“咱們”，用在祈求式，例如：ta-kan-i“咱們吃吧！”ta-daux-i“咱們喝吧！”ta-kita?-aw“咱們看吧！”第三人稱其實是指示代詞，區分近指和遠指，而遠指又區分視界內和視界外。
五、動貌

如同其他南島語言，巴宰語的“完成式”以中綴 -in-（插在第一個輔音之後）表示。例如：

18. m<in>K-KKn siw sumay lia?
    AF-已-吃 你/主 飯 了
    你吃過飯了嗎？

19. awi ka p<in>a-kan durun ni tata.
    人名 題 使-已-吃 米糠 屬 繼母
    繼母給阿維吃米糠。

20. mamah ka uzay nisiw p<in>arisan aku.
    兄 題 不是 你的 已 生 我/主
    哥哥說我不是你生的。

21. x<in>arKb-an ki xuma.
    已-燒-LF 主 房
    房子已經燒了。

表示完成的-in-可以用在主事焦點，也可以用在受事焦點，處所焦點。在受事焦點中，-in-並不和-Kn 聯用，也就是通常不使用受事焦點標記-Kn。這種現象正和一般台灣與西部南島語言相同。-in-常和處所焦點標記聯用：

22. d<in>idis-an naki a maxiasu lia ki laladan.
    已-擦-LF 我的 媳婦 了 主 桌
    桌子已被我媳婦擦過了。

雖然主事焦點也可以表示已經發生的事件，但是帶-in-才能確定確實已經發生。有時-in-的有無，甚至表示相反的意思。例如：

23a. aba ka paxarihan mu-puzah dini.
    父 題 忘記 AF-來 這裡
    父親忘了到這裡來。（他沒來）
Pazih Texts and Songs

b. aba ka paxarihan m<in>u-puzah dini.

父親忘了他已來過這裡了。
出現動詞組後面的 lia 有如華語普通話的 "了"，表示動作已經開始或完成，例如上面例句 22，又如：
24. maNit lia ki rakihan.
    哭    了    主    小孩
    小孩哭了。
25. yaku mukukusa muruput lia.
    我    工作    完成    了
    我工作完成了。
26. mausay lia aku.
    要走    了    我
    我要走了。

正在進行以重疊動詞語根的第一個音節來表示，而且元音都以 a 取代並且是長元音。例如：
27. yaku kaa-kKn dukul.
    我    在吃    芋頭
    我正在吃芋頭。
28. yaku daa-daux dalum.
    我    在喝    水
    我正在喝水。
29. ina ka baa-bazu siatu.
    母    題    在洗    衣服
    母親正在洗衣服。

正在進行也可以中綴-a- ( 插在第一個輔音之後 ) 表示。例如：
30. m<a>idKm lia ki rakihan.
    在睡    了    主    小孩
    小孩在睡覺了。
31. abuk t<a>umala abua m<a>aturay.
阿木正在聽 Abua 在唱歌。
未來以後綴 -ay 或 -aw 表示。例如:
32. mapa?-ay rakihan ki kayu.
揹 將 小孩 主 人名
Kayu 將要揹小孩。
33. palazKm a isiw, ta-kita?-aw.
過年 你 咱 看 將
你過年，咱們將要看。

六、否定詞

巴宰語有以下這些否定詞：ini’不’，uzay’不是’，kuaN～kuah’沒有’，mayaw‘還 沒’，nah’不要’，ana′別。其中以ini最常用，它否定動態動詞 (如34) 和靜態動詞 (如35)。uzay出現在名詞之前，它否定整個子句 (如36)，也出現在分裂句或準分裂 句 (如37)。kuaN是nahada′有’的反義詞 (如38)。ana出現在主事者焦點動詞之前， 也就是帶 -m- 的動詞，這一點巴宰語跟其他台灣南島語（如泰雅語）不同，在 其他語言是不帶 -m- 的動詞原形。例如，
34. ini mukusa aku.
不 去 我
我沒去。
35. ini bagKt aku.
不 胖 我
我不胖。
36. yaku ka uzay pazih.
我 題 不是 巴宰
我不是巴宰人。
37. uzay yaku ka hapKt mKkKn dadas.
不是 我 題 喜歡 吃 地瓜
不是我喜歡吃地瓜。
Pazih Texts and Songs

38. yaku ka kuaN a paray.
我 題 沒 連 錢
我沒有錢。

39. ana m-idKm di dini!
別 AF- 睡 處 這裡
別在這裡睡覺！
REFERENCES

Asai, Erin (淺井惠倫). 1936. 埔里烏牛欄、房里 [Auran, Puli]。田野筆記 [field notes]。


Inô, Kanori (伊能嘉矩). 1897. 蕃語集 [Pazih language]。田野筆記 [field notes]。

----------. 1908.〈台灣番一支族舊俗及思想及一斑〉。《東京人類學雜誌》24卷 272, 273 號。


----------. 1998.〈巴則海語的格位標記系統〉[The case-marking system of the Pazeh language], 《台灣語言及其教學國際研討會論文集》[Papers from the International Symposium on the Languages and Language Teaching in Taiwan] 1:57-81。新竹師院[Hsinchu Normal College]。


Li, Paul (李壬癸) and Tsuchida Shigeru (土田滋). 2001. Pazih Dictionary 《巴宰語詞典》。Institute of Linguistics (Preparatory Office), Academia Sinica Monograph Series
Pazih Texts and Songs

No.A2.


Lu, Bin-chuan (呂炳川). 1982. 《台灣土著族音樂》 [Aboriginal music of Taiwan]. 中華民俗藝術叢書 3. 台北 [Taipei]: 百科文化。

Ogawa, Naoyoshi (小川尚義). 1922. Pazeh 語彙 [Pazih wordlist] (a few hundred items). 田野筆記 [field notes].

--------. 1939. 語法材料 [Pazih grammatical data]. 田野筆記 [field notes].

Satô, Bun'ichi (佐藤文一). 1934. 〈大社庄 蕃歌〉，《南方土俗》3.1:114-126。葉婉奇譯，《重塑台灣平埔族圖像》，112-127。台北：原民文化事業有限公司。


--------. 1999. 〈試探 Pazeh 音樂文化的綜攝—以一首台語聖詩為例〉 [A case study

26
on a Taiwanese psalm to explore Pazeh's syncretism in musical culture], 《藝術評論》[Arts Review] 10:25-60.

Wu, Rung-shun (吳榮順). 《巴宰族 Ayan之歌》[Ayan, Songs of Pazeh]. 平埔族音樂紀實系列 (6)。台北 [Taipei]: 風潮有聲出版有限公司 [Wind Records]。
### Abbreviations 縮寫

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Example</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AF</td>
<td>Agent-focus 主事焦點</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ant</td>
<td>anticipating 期待</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asp</td>
<td>aspect 情貌</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BF</td>
<td>Beneficiary-focus 受惠焦點</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus</td>
<td>causative 使役</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conj</td>
<td>conjunction 連接</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dist</td>
<td>distant 遠</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>exc</td>
<td>exclusive 排除式</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>female 女性</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fut</td>
<td>future 未來式</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen</td>
<td>genitive 屬格</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imp</td>
<td>imperative 命令</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Icp</td>
<td>inceptive 起始</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IF</td>
<td>Instrumental-focus 工具焦點</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inc</td>
<td>inclusive 包括式</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>invis</td>
<td>invisible 視界外</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ir</td>
<td>irrealis 非現實式</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LF</td>
<td>Locative-focus 處所焦點</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lig</td>
<td>ligature 連結</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lit</td>
<td>literally 直譯</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Loc</td>
<td>locative 處所</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>male 男性</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neu</td>
<td>neutral 中性</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nmz</td>
<td>nominalize 名物化</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nom</td>
<td>nominative 主格</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Obl</td>
<td>oblique 斜格</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAn</td>
<td>Proto-Austronesian 古南島語</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PF</td>
<td>Patient-focus 受事焦點</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>per</td>
<td>person 人</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poss</td>
<td>possessive 所有格</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pl</td>
<td>plural 複數</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prf</td>
<td>perfective 完成式</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prg</td>
<td>progressive 進行式</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q</td>
<td>question particle 疑問助詞</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rec</td>
<td>reciprocal 相互</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Red</td>
<td>reduplication 重疊</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
RF, Referential-focus 指事焦點
sg, singular 單數
Sta, stative 靜態
Syn, synonym 同義詞
Top, topic 主題
A. Pazih Texts Recorded by Paul Li

Text 1. awi ka paasukuan 阿維的故事 A Story of Awi

Pazih song written by Pan Chi-min (male, 64) on March 2, 1969
Interpreted by Itih (female, 80) on July 22, 1976.
Recorded in Puli by Paul Li

1. awi ka p<in>a-kan durun ni tata.
   personal name   Top     Caus-Prf-eat       rice-bran   Gen  step-mother
   Awi被後母叫他吃米糠。
   Awi was-fed with rice-bran by the step-mother.

2. nahada batan, adadumud-a wazu.
   esixt   company   only one   Lig    dog
   他有一個伴，那就是只有一隻狗。
   (He) had only a friend, which was a dog.

3. aba ka maxa-ruaru.
   father   Top      MAXA-sad
   父親為他而傷心。
   Father was sad.

4. “mausay¹ yaku mi-kita u daxK.”

¹ The verb form mausay is derived from mausa?ay, which can be analyzed as m-a-usa?-ay ‘AF-Prg-go-Fut’.
will go  I  AF-see  Obl  land  
去  我  看  斜  地方
「我要去看個地方。」
"I shall go looking for a place," (Awi said.)

5. kitakita siaa na, nahada u rKIKn.  
AF-see  everywhere  exist  Obl  village  
看  到處  有  村
看來去看，（看到）有村莊。
(He) kept looking around, (and) there were villages.

6. mausay lai sia, mata di dapi-dapi.  
will go  Asp  he  from  Red-ciff  
要去  了  他  從  懸崖，山路  
他要去了，走過懸崖峭壁。
He was leaving, and he (had to) pass through the steep rocky road.

7. kita-kita siaa na, nahada u dalum.  
Red-look  everywhere  exist  Obl  water  
看  到處  有  水
看來去看，（看到）有水。
(He) kept looking around, (and) there was water.

8. m<a>atu-xumak-ay dini.  
build-Prg-house-Fut  here  
要蓋房子  這裡  
(他)要在這裡蓋房子。
(He) was to built a house here.

9. sasay ki uhuni?  
what  Nom  now  
什麼  主  現在  
現在要怎麼辦？
What will he do now?

10. mu-puzah ki aba, ma-hata-hatan.  
AF-come  father  AF-Red-laugh  
來  父  高興
父親來了(看見他有房子而)高興。
Father came (and) was happy.

11. "naki a lama p açah di babaw
   my destiny Prg-come Loc above
 我的 命 來 自 上(上天)
「我的命是天註定的
"My fortune is determined by God."
12. yaku uhuni ka kuah a ta-u-xumak."
   I now none Agt-house
   我現在沒有妻
   我現在沒有妻子。」
   I do not have a wife now."

13. di rKI Kl nahada maaxi-zapay
    village exist unmarried maid
    村有未婚maid
    村裡有待嫁的閨女。
    There was an unmarried maid in the village.

14. apu ka mu-kawas, "ara-i dini a mamais."
    old woman Top AF-talk take-Imp here lady
    阿婆講(告訴他) 聘 此地女
    老太婆告訴他，「娶這裡的女郎吧！」
    An old woman said (to him), "Marry a girl here!"
Text 2. ni awi a paasukuan 阿維的故事 A Story of Awi

Narrated by Pan Chi-min (male, 71) on Oct. 24, 1976
Recorded in Auran, Puli by Paul Li
潘啟明（男，71歲）口述、解說 (1976.10.24)
李壬癸記錄 地點：愛蘭 (Auran)

1. uhuza ka nahada mamais ka lalu, mamalKN ka abuk
   古時 有 女 人名 男 人名

   dusa a saw.
   二 人

   古時候有—女名叫 Lalu，一男名叫 Abuk，共兩人。

Once upon a time, there were two people, a woman named Lalu and a man named Abuk.

2. maa-ʔisakKP lia ki dusa saw.
   结合了 二 人

   The two people got married.

3. adaN a kawas ma-NazKp, parisan adaN a rakihan a mamalKN, laNat ka
   一年 超過 生 一 孩 男 名叫

   awi sKN.
   人名 據說
   一年多以後，生了一個男孩，名叫 Awi。

It is said that in a little more than a year, (they) had a baby boy named Awi.

4. isia lia ki ina ka mi-kudKr lia ki buxu.
   那時 母 病 了 身體

   Then the mother was ill.
5. dusa ilas lia ka purihat lia ki ina.
   two month Asp Top die Asp mother
   二月了死了母
   兩個月之後他母親死了。
   Two months later, the mother died.

6. isia lia ki aba, "sasai-n lia ki yaku a uhuni nahada rabξx a
   then Asp father what to do-PF Asp I now exist little
   那時了父怎麼辦了我現在有幼小
   rakihan?"
   baby
   那時父親想，「有一個幼小的孩子，我怎麼辦？」
   Then the father (asked himself), "What shall I do now that I have a little baby?"

7. adaN a dali, tau-barKd- a apu mu-puzah lia.
   one day neighbor old woman AF-come Asp
   有一天鄰居婆來了
   On a certain day, a neighbor (and) old woman came (to him).

8. "abuk, ara-i adaN a ta-u-xumak aunu sarap-Kn u rakihan."
   name take-imp one Agt-house for take care-PF Obl baby
   人名娶一可以照顧孩
   「Abuk，娶妻來照顧小孩。」
   "Abuk, take another wife, so that she can take care of the baby."

   fine Asp name
   好人名
   Abuk說，「好的。」
   "All right," said Abuk.

10. liaka m-ara ta-u-xumak.
    then AF-take Agt-house
    然後娶妻
    然後（他）就娶了太太了。
Then (he) got married.

11. dusa kawas liaka parisan u rakihan a mamal Kn lia, laNat ka two year then was born baby boy Asp name

It is said that two years later (she) had a baby boy named Adaway.

12. adaNa a lias, adaNa a ilas, adaNa a kawas, adaNa a kawas, ma-taru a one Lig month one month one year one year Sta-big—月—月—年—年—大 rakihan. child

Month after month, year after year, the child was growing.

13. ma-baza mK-Kn u sumay lia. AF-know AF-eat Obl rice Asp

他會吃飯了。

(He) knew (how) to eat rice.

14. isia liaka ini mi-kita lia ka awi. then then not AF-see Asp personal name

那時然後不看了人名

Then (she) looked down upon Awi.

15. tata p<in>arisan ka mK-Kn r<IN>xaw sumay, awi ka pa-kan-Kn step-mother Prf-born AF-eat Prf-congee rice name Caus-eat-PF

繼母生的吃稀飯飯人名餵

durun.
The step mother’s own child ate rice gruel, whereas Awi was fed with rice bran.

16. **isía** **lia** **ki** **awi** **maxa**-**K**-**K**ila\(^1\), **ma**-**kawas** **aba** **lia**, ‘mausay ma**-**rukat

then **Asp** **Nom** **MAXA-Red-think** **AF**-**tell** **father** **Asp** **will** **go** **AF**-**go out**

那時 了 想 告訴 父 了 要去 出去

---

\(^1\) The prefix *maxa* + N ‘to produce, to bring forth’; see Li and Tsuchida (2001:13-14).
Pazih Texts and Songs

maanu a daxK."
far land
遠地方

Then Awi thought it over (and) said to his father, "(I) want to go to a distant place."

17. isia lia ki aba sadiah a hinis.
then Asp father sad heart
那時了父難過心

Then the father was sad.

18. "haw la, ki nisw a hinis ka haw i."
fine your heart good
好你的心好

“All right, your idea is good.”

19. isia lia ki awi ka pikadun lia.
then Asp personal name set out Asp
那時了人名出發了

Then Awi set out.

20. mu-kusa mu-riaax ka daxK lia.
AF-go AF-Red-find land Asp
去找地方了

(He) went looking for a place (to live).

21. awi ka pasakKn di dida lia.
arrive that place Asp
到達那地方了

Awi arrived at a certain place.

22. mi-kita daya rahut ka, nahada subud- a dalum.
AF-see east west exist spring Lig water
東看西看（看到）有泉水。

(He) looked to the east (and) to the west, and there was spring water.
23. “liaka “riak ka dini.”
   then good Top here
   然後 好 這裡
   然後 (他) 說這地方好。
   Then he said, “It is good here.”

       build-Prg-house-Fut Loc here Asp personal name
       蓋房 處 這裡 了 人名
       Awi 說, 「(我)要在此地蓋房子。」
       “(I'm) going to build a house here,” Awi said.

25. isia lia ki aba ka mu-puzah mu-riax awi lia.
       then father AF-come AF-find Asp
       那時 父 來 找 了
       那時父親來找 Awi
       Then father came to look for Awi.

       father AF-see AF-Red-laugh produce-tears Asp
       父 看 高興 流淚 了
       父親看見 Awi。Awi 高興得流淚。
       Father saw Awi. Awi was so happy that he shed tears.

27. di dida rK̪n nahada ka apu.
       Loc that village have old woman
       處 那 村 有 阿婆
       那村有一個老太婆。
       That village had an old woman.

28. mi-kita mamalKN, pa-dudu lia ki apu, “mamalKN,nahada ta-u-xumak
       AF-see young man PA-ask Asp old woman young man have Agt-house
       看見 少年 問 了 阿婆 少年人 有 成家
       siw?”
       you
       看見少年人，老太婆就問，「年輕人，你娶了沒有？」
Seeing the young man, the old woman asked, “Young man, are you married?”
Pazih Texts and Songs

29. “kuah.”
   none
   沒有
   「還沒。」
   "Not yet."

30. “ara-i di dini a maaxi-zapay!”
    take-lmp Loc here unmarried maid
    「娶這裡的姑娘吧！」
    "Marry a girl here!"

31. “apu, yaku ka kuah a adaNa a saysay.”
    old woman 1 none one anything
    阿婆 我 沒 一個 東西
    「阿婆，我什麼都沒有。」
    "Madam, I haven't got anything."

32. “rak. ta-si-karum-i mamais a xumak.”
    fine let's-go-inside-lmp lady house
    好咱入贅女家
    「好，給女家入贅吧！」
    "Fine, then marry yourself into the girl's family."

33. awi isia liaka ma-sika-sikat.
    personal name then then Sta-Red-shy
    Awi 那時害羞。
    Awi was then shy.

34. “haw,” lia ki awi.
    alright Asp Nom personal name
    Awi 說,「好！」
    "All right," Awi said.

35. liaka maa-?isakKp isia lia.
    then Rec-get together then Asp
然後他就跟那個女子結婚了。
Then they got married.

36. isia liaka maa-?isakKp adaN a kawas parisan rakihan a mamalK.N.
then then Rec-get together one year was born baby boy
那時然後結婚一年生孩男的
結婚後一年生了一個男孩。
Then a year after the marriage, (they) had a baby boy.

37. isia lia ki aba u tata mi-kita ali lia, ma-hata-hatan lia.
then Asp Nom father and step-mother AF-see grandson Asp AF-Red-laugh Asp
那時了主父和繼母看孫子了高興了
那時他父親和繼母看見孫子都很高興了。
Then (Awi's) father and step mother saw the grandson, (and they were both) happy.
Text 3. ni awi a paasukuan 阿維的故事 A Story of Awi

Written by Pan Tsai-sih
Interpreted by Pan Chi-min (male, 83) on Feb.10, 1988
Recorded in Auran, Puli by Paul Li

1. yaku ka ta-dudu?-i paasukuan.
   I let's-tell-imp story
   我講故事
   我要講故事。
   Let's tell a story.

2. uhuza ka nahada mamais u mamalKN.
   before exist lady and man
   從前有女與男
   從前有一女和一男。
   Once upon a time there were a woman and a man.

3. mamalKN ka abuk sKn ki laNat.
   man personal name said name
   男的人名據說名
   男的名叫Abuk。
   The man was named Abuk.

4. mamais ka kalayu sKn.
   lady female name said name
   女女子名據說
   女的叫做Kalayu。
   The woman was named Kalayu.

5. maa-rKzKrKI adaN’ a kawas lia.
   Rec-together one year Asp
   在一起一年了
   他們結婚有一年了。
   They got married for a year.

6. liaka parisan rakah a mamalKN.
then was born baby boy
於是生子男
於是他們生了一個男孩。
Then they had a baby boy.

7. awi s\text{Kn} ki laNat. (= laNat ka awi s\text{Kn})
personal name said name name personal name is said
人名據說名名人名據說
據說他的名字叫做阿維。
It is said that his name was Awi.

8. ada\text{N} a dali, mi-kudur lia ki kalayu.
One day AF-sick Asp name
一天生病了女子名
有一天Kalayu生病了。
Kalayu got sick on a certain day.

9. ada\text{N} a dali, ada\text{N} a dali, ini riak ki buxu.
one day one day not good body
一天又一天，她身體始終不好。
Day after day, she did not get well.

10. ini riak ki kalayu a lama.
not good name destiny
Kalayu命不好。
Kalayu had a bad luck.

11. liaka purihat lia ki kalayu.
then die Asp name
於是死了女子名
於是Kalayu死了。
Then Kalayu died.

12. isia lia ki abuk ka maxa-k\text{K}-k\text{K}ia kalayu lia.
then name MAXA-Red-think name Asp
那時人名想念女名了

45
Pazih Texts and Songs

於是 Abuk 他想念太太 Kalayu。
Abuk missed Kalayu.

13. "sasai-n pai ki awi a imini tath-an a rakihan?"
what to do-PF Q name Lig this little-Nmz child
怎麼辦 Q 人名 這個 小的 孩
「如何處理阿維這個小的孩子？」 (Abuk 問自己。)
"What shall I do with Awi this little child?" Abuk thought.
14. maxa-ru-aruaru lia ki abuk.
become-Red-sad Asp name

Abuk very sad.

15. tau-barKd- a rKkN ka nahada lia ki apu.
neighbor village exist Asp old woman

In a neighboring village there was an old woman.

16. mu-kawas ki apu, tarih a rakihan. ara-i adaN a ta-u-xumak,
AF-talk old woman little child take-Imp one Agt-house

The old woman said, "The child is too young. Take another girl to wife, so that she can take care of Awi."

17. "haw lia." ki abuk.
alright Asp Nom name

"All right," Abuk said.

18. m-ara aubil a ta-u-xumak lia.
AF-take second Agt-house Asp

He married a second wife.

19. aubin a mamais ka adunu sKkN.
second lady female name is said

The second lady's name is said.
Pazih Texts and Songs

It is said that the second wife’s name was Adunu.
20. aubin a dali adaN a kawas maNazKp parisan rakihaŋ a mamal KN.  
後 天 一 年 多 生 子 男  
More than a year later she had a baby boy.

21. damuri s KN ki laNat.  
人名 報說 名  
It is said that his named was Damuri.

22. ma-taru lia ki awi, suadi ma-baza mu-zakay.  
大了 人名 弟 會 走  
Awi was growing up, and his younger brother learned how to walk.

23. ini riak a hinis lia ki aubin a tata.  
不 好 心 了 後 姨  
The step-mother did not have a kind heart.

24. tatalima rakihaŋ ka pa-kan-KN r<IN>xaw, awi ya imini ka pa-kan-KN durun.  
自己 子 使吃 稀飯 人名 這個  
She fed her own son with rice gruel, yet she fed Awi with bran.

25. tata imini ka sadih a hinis.  
姨 這個 壞 心  
這位繼母心壞。
Pazih Texts and Songs

This stepmother was hard-hearted.
26. isia lia ki awi ka maxa-kK-kKla pariṣan a ina.  
then Asp name MAXA-Red-think was born mother  
那時了人名想念生母  
於是阿維他想念生母。  
Thus Awi missed his own mother.

27. "ini purihat ki naki a ina ka, ini ma-luhusu mi-kita yaku," lia ki  
not die my mother not Sta-in that way AF-see I Asp  
不死我的題不那樣看我  
awi. name  
人名  
「我母親要不死，就不會那樣看待我。」阿維想。  
"If my own mother had not died, she would not have treated me in that manner," he thought.

28. maamaal KN lia ki awi a imini.  
young man Asp name this  
少年了人名此  
這個Awi長成少年了。  
This Awi grew up as a young man.

29. "aba, m<a>-a-rukad-ay lia ki yaku. naki a suadi ma-taru lia.  
father AF-Prg-go out-Fut Asp I my younger brother Sta-big Asp  
爸要去出了我我的弟大了  
yaku ka m<a>-usa?-ay mu-riax riak a daxK."  
I AF-go-Fut AF-find good land  
我要去找好地方  
「爸爸我要出去了，我弟弟長大了，我要去找個好地方。」  
"Daddy, I'm leaving. My younger brother is growing up. I'm going to look for a better place."

30. tumala lia ki aba ka, maxa-ru-aruaru lia ki aba.  
listen Asp father become-Red-sad Asp father  
聽了父很傷心了父  
父親聽了很傷心。  
When the father heard this, he was very sad.

31. tata ka ini riak a dais.
The step mother frowned.

Then Awi set out.

He walked to the jungle, up the cliffs, down the mountains and got to a lake.

He found nice spring water in front of him.

Awi rested there.

Awi went far to think about his name.
阿維想道：「走了很遠的路了，此地是個好地方。」
Awi thought, "I have walked a long way. This is a good place here."

37. m<\textgreater>atu-xum-ay di dini lia ki awi.
build-Prg-house-Fut here Asp name
阿維要在此地蓋房子。
Awi was going to build a house here.

38. taa-tamak-ay kahuy lia ki awi.
Red-cut-Fut tree Asp name
阿維砍樹。
Awi was going to cut trees.

39. raa-razaw lia ki maaxi-zapay a mamais.
Red-pass by Asp maid lady
有個未婚姑娘打從那兒經過。
An unmarried girl was passing by.

40. awi ka mi-kita dakan a apu.
name AF-see front old woman
阿維看見前面來了一個老太婆。
Awi saw an old woman in front of him.

41. "saysay pai siw?"
what Q you
「你在做什麼？」
"What are you doing?"

42. awi ka, “taa-tamak-ay kahuy m<\textgreater>atu-xum-ay di dini ki yaku.”
name Red-cut-Fut tree build-Prg-house-Fut here I
阿維說，「我要砍樹，要在此地蓋房子。」
Awi said, "I want to cut trees and build a house here."
Pazih Texts and Songs

Awi said, "I'm cutting trees to build a house here."

43. "nahada ta-u-xumak siw?"
exist Agt-house you
「你成家了沒有？」
"Are you married?"

44. "kuah aku."
none I
「我沒有。」
"Not yet."
45. “ta-ara?-ay di dini a mamais, haw?”
   Let's-take-Fut Loc here lady fine
   「在這兒娶太太，好吧？」
   “How about getting married here?”

46. “mayaw matuxumak lia ki yaku.”
   not yet build house Asp I
   「我還沒蓋好房子呢！」
   “I have not finished building a house yet.”

47. “anu riak a barKt mu-kukusa.”
   for good companion AF-work
   「(娶一個)好做伴和工作呀！」
   “(A wife) will be your good companion and coworker.”

48. m-ara imini a mamais ka riak a mamais.
   AF-take here Lig lady good lady
   他在此地娶的女子是好女子。
   The girl he married here was a good one.

49. awi a mamais ka taruat sKn ki laNat.
   name lady personal name said name
   據說阿維的太太名叫Taruat.
   It is said that Awi's wife was named Taruat.

50. dusa lia ka mu-tukut dKtKm, piaxun, tawtaw, dadas, dukun; nahada two Asp AF-sow com millet peanut sweet potatoe taro exist
   lia ki t<in>ukut.
   Asp Prf-sow
   了 種

   55
The couple planted corn, millet, peanuts, sweet potatoes and taroes.
51. aubin a dali, taruad a imini ka parisan adaN a rakah a mamalK N.
  later day name this was born one baby boy
  後日女人名這個生一孩男
  後來有一天，這位Taruat生了一個男孩。
  *Later on a certain day, Taruat had a baby boy.*

52. awi ka ma-hata-hatan nahada rakah a mamalK N.
  name AF-Red-laugh exist baby boy
  人名高興有孩男
  阿維高興有了一個男孩。
  *Awi was very happy to have a son.*

53. dusa ka riak a mu-razaw dali.
  two good AF-pass day
  二人好過日
  二人過好日子。
  *The two (people) had an easy life = The couple enjoyed their life.*

54. dini a daxK ka auran skN.
  here land place name is said
  此地愛蘭據說
  據說此地就叫做愛蘭（現地名，古名烏牛欄）。
  *It is said that this place is called Auran.*
Text 4. itih¹ a paku paasukuan (鷹鳥名)的故事
The Story of Transforming into an Eagle

Narrated by Itih (female, 80) on Sept. 30, 1976
Recorded in Puli by Paul Li

1. ina ka pur(a)hat lia. (Her own) mother died.
2. aba ka m-ara aubil a tata ka, ini saisim-an imisiw. Although father married a second wife, (she) did not love her.
3. adaN a dali, adaN a dali m-aNit lia. (She) cried everyday.
4. ma-kus a ina ka, hapKt mu-kusa maki namisiw a ina. (She) told (her own) mother in a dream that she wanted to go with her mother.
5. namisiw ina ka, “hapKt mu-?asay pai siw?”

¹ A Pazih legend says that Itih is the name of a bird, which cries kaw or kuak at noon.
Her mother (asked), "What do you want?"

Her mother (said), "Take a dustpan and cut it into two! (And then) tie them unto the shoulders!"

(She) flew to above the roof.

(She) flew to above the roof.

The word 'to' is a loan from Taiwanese kau 'to'.

2
Pazih Texts and Songs

飛到上樹
She flew above the trees.

11. ma-ha-bahar  kaw, kaw, wawaw.
AF-HA-fly to above sky
飛到天上。
(She) flew up in the sky.

12. dalian ka mi-kiliw, “kaw, kaw.”
noon AF-cry
午叫
午時她就叫“kaw, kaw”(那便是煮午飯之時了)。
At noon (she) cried, "kaw, kaw."
Text 5. paNapaN 孕了一條腿的美女 A Pretty Girl Missing a Leg

Narrated by Ith (female, 80) on Oct. 26, 1976
Recorded in Puli by Paul Li
王伊底口述、解說 (1976.10.26)
李壬癸記錄
地點：埔里

1. nu uhuza taubur, anu maaka-hapKd a saw ka mu-kusa di
   從前 集會場 為了 禮愛 人 去 向

   taubur.
   gathering place

   從前的集會場是相愛的人才去。
   As for the ancient gathering place, people who were in love would go there.

2. mu-puzah ma-turay ka maaxizapay.
   北-來 北-唱 未婚姑娘
   Unmarried girls came to sing.

3. m-itul, mamalKN ka mu-kusa m-apa anu mamais.
   站起來 男 去 揹 為了 女
   (As a girl) stood up, a young man (who loved her) would go over to carry the girl on his back.

4. nahada adaN a rubaN mamais, apa?-Kn namisiw a ina mu-kusa di
   有 一 年輕 女 被揹 她 母 去
   taubur a mi-tuku.
   gathering place AF-sit

集合場 坐
Pazih Texts and Songs

有一個女孩，由她的媽揹著去會場坐。
There was a young lady, carried on the back by her mother to go to the gathering place (and) sit (there).
5. hinaw riak a rubaN mamais ka, ini apaʔ-Kn ni saw.  
very good young lady not carry-PF person  
(她是)很漂亮的女人，但卻沒人揹。  
The young lady was very pretty, yet (she) was not carried by anybody.

6. nahada rubaN mamalKN maxu-taxa imisiw a kizKx.  
have young man MAXU-wait her stand up  
有個男孩(在)等她站起來。  
There was a young man waiting for her to stand up.

7. namisiw a ina mu-pudah mi-kita namisiw a raiwan ini asuʔ-un ni  
her mother AF-come AF-see her child not carry-PF  
她母來看她的孩子，沒人帶。  
Her mother came back to find that her girl was not carried away by anybody.

8. maapaʔay namisiw a rakihan, mu-xalit namisiw a rima.  
shall carry her child AF-lead her hand  
(她)要揹她的孩子時，拉她的手。  
Before carrying her child, she took her hands.

9. rubaN mamais m-itul lia.  
young lady AF-get up Asp  
女孩站起來了。

---

1 The underlying verb form of maapaʔay would have three vowel a’s in sequence maa-apaʔ-ay ‘Rec-carry-Fut’, yet the restriction of not permitting more than two identical vowels in sequence deletes one a.
The young lady stood up.
10. kuah a adaN a karaw.
   None  one  leg

   (she) lost one leg.

11. rubaN mamais ka ma-sikat.
    Young lady  St-embarrassed

    A girl felt embarrassed.

12. mu-kusa maxa-?ayam a.
    AF-go  become-bird

    She went to become a bird.

13. nah pa-kita saw lia.
    not  Caus-see  people  Asp

    She did not want people to see her.

14. mausay di maanu a binayu lia.
    will go  Loc  far  mountain  Asp

    She went to a mountain far away.

15. "na hapkt mi-kita yaku a saw ka, alu binayu a ma-lalKN ka
    if want  AF-see  I  Lig people  come  mountain  AF-live
    to see

    'If want to see me, come and live in the mountain.'
Pazih Texts and Songs

“If people want to see me, they should come to live in the mountain to see me.”
16. ahuan aidi binayu a mi-kiliw, ‘paN, paN’ ka yaku.”
   night at mountain AF-cry I
   夜 在那 山 叫 我
   晚上在山上叫“paN, paN”的就是我。」
   At night time (when a bird) cries ‘paN, paN’ in the mountain, that is me.”

17. namisiw a laNat ka paNapaN.
   her name personal name
   她的 名 人名
   她的名字是 PaNapaN。
   Her name is PaNapaN.
Text 6. rakihan ka kiusun u rahuay 孩子被老鷹挾走了

The Child Was Seized by an Eagle

Narrated by Ith (female, 80) on Oct. 27, 1976
Recorded in Puli by Paul Li

In Japan there is such a story: While a man and his wife were working in the field, their baby sleeping in a cradle was seized away by an eagle. The baby grew up in the eagle’s nest. He was left on a pine tree in the yard of a temple by the eagle. Then he was saved and became a disciple of the temple. It took his mother 30 years to find him. Later on he became a famous Buddhist monk. See Hirako Ikeda (1971). A Type and Motif Index of Japanese Folk-Literature, pp. 182-183.


1. yaku  m<a>a-ka-kawas-ay uhuza paasukuan.
   I AF-Prg-Red-tell-Fut ancient story
   我將講古代的故事。
   I shall tell an old story.

2. mamais mamal KN paxu-karit¹.
   woman  man work in a field
   女  男 做園子
   A woman and a man were working in a field.

3. tumula rakihan a  m<a>aNit.

¹ The function of the verbal prefix paxu- or maxu- is not clear and has limited usage; see Li and Tsuchida (2001:14, 192, 231).
4. m-itul m-ukusa mi-kita lia.
   AF-get up AF-go AF-look Asp
   站去看了
   (They) stood up (and) went to look at it.

5. ara, pa-sabar² di duhuling a axKrKt.
   Oh! get-caught Loc interwoven vine
   呀掛住在成網狀肉藤
   呀呀！(小孩)掛在爬藤中
   Oh goodness! (The baby) got caught in the interwoven vine.

6. dusa saw m<a>aki-nua-nualKk³ ma-usa?-ay mu-kalapu rakihan.
   two people Prg-MAKI-Red-hurry AF-go-Fut AF-hold baby
   兩人趕緊去抱孩子。
   The two people rushed there to take down the baby.

7. mu-xalit axKrKt paka-da-daxK.
   AF-pull vine Caus-Red-low
   他們把爬藤扯低。
   (They) pulled down the vine.

8. kalapu?-un ki rakihan.
   hold-PF Nom baby
   孩子抱起來。

² The prefix pa- may indicate `causative' or `verbalizer;' see Li and Tsuchida (2001:15, 263).
³ The prefix maki- has limited usage; see Li and Tsuchida (2001:180).
The baby was held up.

9. kita sKn ka rakihan mamalKN.
    look said Top baby boy

一看是個男孩。

(They) looked (at it and it was) a baby boy.
10. yamisiw ma⁴ nahada mamalKN a rakahin.
they also have boy Lig child
他們也有男孩。
They also had a boy.

11. m-iba rakahin ka m-ukusa di xumak lia.
AF-hold baby AF-go home Asp
抱孩子回家。
They held the baby in their arms and went home with it.

name have younger brother Asp
人名有弟了
「Kaidan, you have got a little brother.」
“Kaidan, you have got a little brother.”

13. imini ka bauki sKn a laNat.
this Top name said Lig name
這個名字是Bauki。
This one’s name is Bauki.

14. adaN a dali, adaN a dali, maidKh kutab- a daurik a isiz-
a one Lig day one Lig day soon twinkling eyes Lig ten Lig
一天一天很快眨眼眼十
xasKb- a turu⁵ a kawas.
five Lig three year

---

⁴ The form ma is a loan from Taiwanese ma ‘also’.
⁵ There are two different ways of saying numerals from eleven to nineteen in Pazih, as recorded in Li and Tsuchida (2001:132). Here is an example of still another way of saying these numerals. Cf. isit xasKbísupat ‘nineteen’ in Sentence 67 in Text 7 below. These differences may have to do with variations of different speakers.
Day after day, it was soon eighteen (years) at the twinkling of eyes.

15. abasan suadi maxu-papah.
elder brother younger brother MAXU-quarrel

兄弟吵架。
The elder and younger brothers quarreled with each other.

16. "pa-raxiw! uzay ina p<in>arisan siw. t<in>ingi rahuay siw."
PAGet out not mother Prf-born you Prf-snatch eagle you/Nom

走開，不是母 生的 你 拈 老鷹 你
「走開，你不是媽媽生的，你是老鷹挾來的。」
"Get out! You were not born by Mother. You were snatched away by an eagle"

17. mu-pudah lia ki ina ka mi-kixi ina li,
AF-return Asp Nom mother Top AF-complain mother Asp elder brother Top

來自 母 訴苦 母 兄
uzay ni siw p<in>arisan aku."
not Gen you Prf-born I/Nom

非 你 生 我
媽媽回來時就向她告狀，「哥哥說，我不是你生的。」
When Mother returned home, (Bauki) complained to her, "My brother said that I was not born by you."

18. "kalaxi. isiw ma naki a p<in>arisan."
untrue you also my Lig Prf-born

不對 你 也 我 生
「不對，你也是我生的。」
"That's not true. You were also born by me."

19. "uzay nisiw a p<in>arisan. ma-taaru lia aku. m-usay mu-riax naki
not your Lig Prf-born Sta-grow up Asp I AF-go AF-find my
不是 你的 生 大 了 我 去 找 我的
a ina."
Lig mother
「不是你生的，我長大了，我要去找我的生母。」

"I was not born by you. I have grown up. I shall go looking for my mother."
Pazih Texts and Songs

20. “usa riax-il na⁶ riax-Kn ka, alu pa-kawas-i yaku. na kuah ka, go look-imp if find-PF Top come tell-imp me if not have
去 找 若 找 話 告訴 我 若 沒有
wailu alu xumak.”
early return home
快 回來 家
「去找吧！找到時來告訴我。如果沒有，趕快回家來。」
“Go looking for (her)! If (she) is found, come to let me know. If there is none, come home early.”

21. saasaunan p<a>ikadul mu-pupu sumay pazay anu di daran
morning Prg-set out AF-make ball rice glutinous rice for Loc road
早上 動身 揉(飯糰) 飯 糯米 為 處 路
a ka-kan-Kn.
Red-eat-PF
吃
他早上要動身時，(家裡)做糯米糰到路上吃。
As (he) was setting out in the morning, (they) made balls of sticky rice to eat on the way.

22. ma-xatukul di binayu, liaka mi-kita u rKtKl lia.
AF-climb Loc mountain then AF-see Obl village Asp
爬(山) 處 山 然後 看 村 了
他爬山，然後看見村子。
(He) climbed mountains and then saw a village.

23. ma-rixaux m-ukusa di rKtKl mu-riax namisiw ina.
AF-go down AF-go village AF-find his/Gen mother
下山 去 村 找 他的 母
下山去村子找他母親。
(He) went down to go to a village to look for his mother.

24. pasakKn di rKtKl ka, sKm lia.
arrive village Conj late, dark Asp
到達 村 晚,天黑 了

⁶ Loan word from Taiwanese na ‘if’.
到村子時天已黑了。
*Upon arrival at the village, it got dark.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

25. xumak a k<in>ixid-an ka, nahada puNu kahuy.
   house  Prf-nearby-Loc Top  have  trunk  tree
   房子  旁邊  有  樹幹  樹
   房子旁有一棵樹。
   Nearby a house there was a tree.

26. ma-xatukul di babaw kahuy.
   AF-climb  up  tree
   爬  上  樹
   ( 他 ) 爬到樹上。
   (He) climbed the tree.

27. m-ara namisiw a xuriuk ka, p<a>uhuni xuriuk.
   AF-take  his/Gen  flute  Prg-play  flute
   拿  他的  笛  在吹  笛
   拿起他的笛來吹。
   (He) took out his flute to play it.

28. ma-tanga xumak. mi-kiliw, “ima pai siw? saasay ahuan a dali aidi
   AF-open  house  AF-cry  who  Q  you  do  night  day  there
   開(門)  房  叫  誰  你  做什麼  晚上  天  在那兒
   siw?  alu,  alu  yamian.”
   you  come  come  we-Loc
   你  來  來  我們這兒
   ( 她 ) 開門叫，「你是誰？這麼晚了在那兒幹嗎？來，來我們這兒！」
   (A woman) called, "Who are you? Why are you there at night time? Come, come over to our place!"

29. p<a>udah di asay pai siw?”
   Prg-come  where  Q  you
   來  何處  你
   「你從何處來？」
   "Where do you come from?” (the woman then asked).

30. yaku ka p<a>udah di maanu. ri-riax naki a ina.”
   I  Top  Prg-come  Loc  far  away  Red-seek  my  Lig  mother
   我  來  處  遠  在找  我  母
   「我從遠處來，正在找我媽。」
   "I come from a place far away. (I am looking for my mother."
31. “saasay ki ri-riax ina?”
   Why Red-seek mother
   「為什麼在找你母親？」
   “Why are (you) looking for (your) mother?”

32. “nimu a dini ka nahada rakikan kius-un u rahuay?”
   you/Gen here Top have child seized-PF Obl eagle
   「你們這兒有孩子被老鷹挾走嗎？」
   “Did you here have a child snatched away by an eagle?”

33. “uhuda ka naki a rakhian ka kius-un u rahuay, ma-sKdKm lia.”
   former Top my Lig child Top seized-PF Obl eagle Sta-long Asp
   「從前我的孩子被老鷹挾走，很久了。」
   “Years ago my child was snatched away by an eagle. It has been a long time ever since.”

34. “nukuasayan lia?”
   when Asp
   「什麼時候？」
   “When was it?”

35. “isiz- a xasKb- a turu a kawas.”
   ten Lig five Lig three year
   「十八年了。」
   “Eighteen years (ago).”

36. “yaku ka nisiw a rakhian.”
   I Top your Lig child
   「我就是你的孩子。」
   “I am your child.”

37. “yaku ki k<in>us-un rahuay.”
   I Nom Prf-was snatched-PF eagle
我 被挾 老鷹
「我被老鷹挾走了。」
“I was snatched away by an eagle.”

38. “liaka dKkKn ni saw kaxu uhuni.”
then pick up-PF Gen people until now
然後 挾 人 到 現在
「被人挾到一直到現在。」
“Then (I) was picked up by people until now.”

39. “ma-taru lia -ku ka, pudah mu-riax.”
Sta-big Asp I Conj come AF-find
大 了 我 來 找
「我長大了才來找。」
“I have grown up (so I have) come to look for (my mother).”

40. “saasay pa-yaku kius-un a rahuay?”
why Caus-me seized-PF eagle
為何 使我 挾 老鷹
「我怎麼被老鷹挾走了呢？」
“Why was I snatched away by an eagle?” (the boy asked).

41. “isiw ka ta-aNit.”
you Top baby-cry
你 哭
「你很愛哭。」
“You were a baby-cry.”

42. yaku ka baa-bazu siatu.
I Red-wash clothes
我 正在洗 衣
我正在洗衣服。
I was washing clothes.

43. isiw ka apa?-Kn naki.
you Top carry-PF by me/Gen
你 捂 我
你由我揹著。
You were being carried on my back.

44. m-aNIt  mK-tKzK-tKzKk.
   AF-cry    AF-Red-kick
   哭        亂踢,掙扎
   (你)卻哭著一直亂踢。
   (You) cried, kicking and struggling.
Pazih Texts and Songs

45. liaka m-ukusa di bayu; pa-kizih isiw pa-nunuh.
   then AF-go Loc by water Caus-low you Caus-nurse
   然後 去 水邊 解下 你 餵奶
   我到水旁去，解下你餵你奶。
   Then (I) went by the water to unfasten you (and) nurse (you).

46. liaka pa-idem-en di bayu.
   then Caus-sleep-PF Loc by water
   然後 使睡 水邊
   然後讓你睡在水旁。
   Then (I) made (you) sleep by the water.

47. nahada rahuay p<*>uhah di babaw, mu-kius isiw lia.
   have eagle Prg-arrive Loc above AF-seize you Asp
   有老鷹從高處下來，挾走了你了。
   There came an eagle from above to snatch you away.

48. mu-laNar lia -ku ka, kius-un lia.
   AF-raise head Asp I Conj snatched-PF Asp
   抬頭 看 了 我 被挾走 了
   我抬頭一看（你）已被挾走了。
   (As) I raised my head, (you) had been carried off.

49. m-itul m-ara a|lu|an (yaku) m-usa mu-siNar.
   AF-get up AF-take pole I AF-go AF-chase
   站起 拿 扁擔 我 去 追
   （我）站起來拿扁擔去追。
   Rising to take up a pole, I went chasing (the eagle).

50. liaka m-aNit lia ku.
   then AF-cry Asp I
   然後 哭 了 我
   我哭了。
   Then I cried.

51. mu-rupud- a mu-bazu, liaka mu-kusa xumak a m-aNit.
   AF-finish AF-wash clothes then AF-go home AF-cry

80
完成洗衣然後去家哭
Having finished washing clothes, then I went home to cry.

52. kuah dini lai siw ka, ini ma-taNa aalKp.
without here Asp you Conj not AF-open door

無此地了你也沒有開門。
Without you here, I would not open the door.

53. nah mi-kita ni saw a rakahin.
not want AF-see Gen other Lig child

不要我看人家的孩子。
(I did not want to see other people's children.

54. mi-kita k a m-aNid-ay. uhuni ma maxa-kK-kKla."
AF-see AF-cry-Fut now also MAXA-Red-think

看了要哭現在也想念
Seeing (them) would (make me) cry.

55. "m<in>u-dKKkI yaku a ina ka, saisim-an.
AF-Prf-pick up I mother love-LF

揀到我的母親也疼我。
"The mother who picked me up loves me.

56. mausay m<a>a-kawas m-iruma lia aku naki a p<in>arisan a
will Fut AF-Prf-tell AF-find Asp I my/Gen Prf-born

要去告訴找到了我我的生母了。
I shall go and tell (her) that I have found my own mother.

57. "nahada k<in>udis aidi namisiw a bukun."
Pazih Texts and Songs

have Prf-scratch stay his/Gen back

有爪痕在他的背上

「他的背上有爪痕（所以那是一個顯明的標記，也很容易辨認）。」

"There were scars (left by the eagle's scratching) on his back."
58. “m-iruma naki a p<ir>arisan a ina lia.”
   AF-find my/Gen Prf-born mother Asp
   找到 我的 生 的 母 了
   「我找到我的生母了。」（他告訴揀到他的父母親）
   “(I) have found my own mother,” (he returned home and told the parents who had raised him).

59. “usa ara-i nisiw a ina alu dini a ma-lalKN!”
   go take-Lmp your mother come here AF-live
   去 取 你的 母 來 此地 住
   「去帶你的母親來這兒住！
   “Go to bring your mother here to live (with us)!"

60. dini ka ma-riax a ribu.
   here Top Sta-broad field
   此地 宽 園子
   此地有‘寬大’（很多之意）的田園
   Here are plenty of fields.

61. alu paxuruma aiNaiNar.
   come plant various vegetables and fruits
   來 種 各種蔬果
   來種各種蔬菜水果。」
   Come to plant various vegetables and fruits.

62. asu?-i ki mamah anu maa-parara ma-iliw kapua, siatu,
   take-Lmp Nom brother for Rec-help AF-carry on a pole coverlet clothing
   帶去 兄 習慣 挑 棉被 衣
   褲 各種物件
   帶去你哥哥去幫著挑被子, 衣、褲和各種物件。」
   “Take (your) brother along to help carry coverlet, clothing, trousers, (and) various objects on poles.”

63. maku namisiw a mamah mu-kusa dinamisiw a ina lia.
   with his elder brother AF-go his mother
   與 跟 他的 哥 去 他的 母
   他跟哥哥到他母親處去。
Pazih Texts and Songs

(The boy) went to his mother's (place) with his brother.
64. pasakKl lia, ahuani lia.
   arrive Asp night Asp
   到達了夜了
   When (they) arrived (there), it was night time.

65. m-idKm ahuani.
   AF-sleep night
   睡夜
   (在那兒)過夜。
   (They) slept (there) overnight.

66. ma-kuas namisiw ina, “tia didua ma-lalK; dahu a ka-kan-Kn.”
   AF-tell his mother go there AF-live many Red-eat-PF
   告訴他的母去彼處住多吃的
   (他)告訴他媽媽,「搬到那邊去住; (那兒有)很多吃的。」
   (The boy) said to his mother, “Go there to live; (there is) plenty to eat.”

67. namisiw a ina ka, “haw, m-asu?-ay yamini a balax. niam a
   his mother Conj all right AF-bring-Fut these things we
   他的母好要帶這些東西我們
   (他)要帶著那些東西。我們有的東西就留在此地鎖起來。」
   His mother said, “All right. We shall take those things with us, (but) let's leave the (other) things of ours here (and) lock them up.”

68. m-ukusa maki yamisiw.
   AF-go with them
   去跟他們
   她就跟他們去了。
   (She) went with them.

69. pasakKl lia, ma-hata-hatan.
   arrive Asp AF-Red-laugh
   到了高興
Pazih Texts and Songs

到了，大家很高興。
(When they) arrived, (all) were happy.
70. ma-kawas pa-tumala isia, “haw ria-riak-an dKKKn nisiw.
AF-tell Caus-listen that, she fortunately good pick up-PF you
使 告 使聽 使, 她 幸 好 被揀 你
pa-kan-Kn nisiw [kaw] haimisiw a ma-taru.”
Caus-eat-PF you until that Sta-big
使 吃 你 到(閩語) 那麼 大
生母說給她聽，「幸好被你揀到，又讓你養得那麼大。」
(The boy's mother) said to her, “Fortunately (he) was picked up by you. He was raised by you until
(hew grew) so big.”

71. “maki yami-an ma-lalKKn, ru-runu?-ay rakihan ka maki isiw [ma]
with us-Loc Af-live Red-separate-Fut son with you also
跟 我們 住 分開 兒子 跟 你 也(閩語)
riak.”
good
好
「要跟我們住，或另外孩子跟你(分開住)也好。
(You can) stay with us, (or) it will be fine for you to live separately with your own son.

72. rakihan ka maawis. ini ma-lalKKn.
child skillful not AF-rest
孩 很能幹 不 停止
這孩子很能幹，閒不住。
The boy was very skillful. He would not stay idle.

73. m-ukusa binayu ma-tilikat ka, m-ara ayam, (m-ara) luxut. m-ukusa
AF-go mountain AF-set traps Conj AF-take bird AF-take deer AF-go
去 山上 設陷阱 捕 鳥 捕 鹿(肉) 去
raxuN ka, m-ara alaw.”
river Conj AF-take fish
河 捕 魚
去山上設陷阱就捕獲鳥和鹿，去河裡就捕到魚。」
(if he) went to the mountain to set up traps, (he) caught birds (and) deer. (If he) went to the stream,
he caught fish.

74. “ru-runu a yaku.”
Red-separate 了
分開
我
生母說，「我分開住好了。」
I'd rather live separately.
Text 7. kiusun rahuay 被老鷹抓走 Seized by an Eagle

Narrated by Pan Jin-yu (female, 84) on April 17, 1997
Recorded in Auran, Puli by Paul Li
潘金玉（女，84歲）口述、解說 (1997.4.17)
李壬癸記錄
地點：埔里愛蘭

1. ta-dudu-aw paasukuan laita.
   Let's talk story us
   咱講故事咱們
   咱們來講故事。
   *Let's talk about a story.

2. uhuu-huuza ka nahada dusa mamais mamalKN.
   Red-before Top exist two lady man
   很久以前有男女兩人。
   *In the long past there were a man and a woman.

3. parisan adaN a rakihan mamalKN.
   was born one Lig baby boy
   他們生了一個男孩。
   *They had a baby boy.

4. m<a>-usa?-ay di karid-an mu-kukusa lia la\(^1\).
   AF-go-Fut Loc swidden field-Nmz AF-work Asp
   他們到田裡去工作。
   *They were going to the swidden field to work.

5. mausay paxuruma dKIkm, xaidaN, tukun la.
   will go plant corn bean taro
   *The sentence-final particle la is a loan from Taiwanese la.

---
\(^1\) The sentence-final particle la is a loan from Taiwanese la.
They were going to plant corn, beans and taro.

When they arrived at the field, they found that there was a big tree.

There was a large rock under it.

Then the mother released the baby and let him sleep on the rock.

Those two people then left for work.

There was a big eagle on the tree.
The eagle saw something moving under it.
Pazih Texts and Songs

12. mi-kita liaka asay xaimini ka-kan-Kn.  
AF-see then what this Red-eat-PF  
看了然後什麼這個可吃  
牠看到了以為是什麼可以吃的東西。  
When it saw that and thought that there was something to eat.

13. liaka kius-Kn asu-n di maanu lia.  
then seize-PF bring-PF Loc far Asp  
然後挾帶遠了  
然後（嬰兒）就被挾走了，帶到很遠的地方去了。  
Then the baby was seized and carried far away.

14. mata di xanixanisay a binayu lia xanixanisay a raxuN.  
from how many mountain Asp how many river  
一山翻過一山，一條河又過一條河。  
It flew over several mountains and rivers.

15. liaka m-aNit lia ki rakihan lia.  
then AF-cry Asp baby Asp  
然後哭了孩子了  
然後小孩哭了。  
Then the baby cried.

16. maxi-a-?aNi-?aNit lia ki rakihan, ma-taru a siNax lia.  
bring forth-A-Red-cry Asp baby Sta-big sound Asp  
哭得凶了孩子大聲了  
小孩一直哭得很凶，聲音很大。  
The baby kept crying very loudly.

17. hada ababaw raa-rapun.  
exist God Red-take care of  
有上天照顧  
有上天照顧。  
God was taking care of him.

18. liaka mi-kita lia ki rahuay, uzay ka-kan-Kn xaimini.  
then AF-see Asp eagle not Red-eat-PF this  
...
然後老鷹看見這並不是食物。

*Then the eagle found that it was not something to eat.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

19. haik i saw rakh xainini.
    seem human baby this
似乎人孩這
這似乎是嬰兒。
It looked like a human being.

20. mi-kita ruburubu a saw mu-kukusa.
    AF-see below people AF-Prg-work
看下人工作
牠看見下面有人在工作。
(The eagle) saw someone working down below.

21. kaidi dida mu-kukusa a saw ka kaidan sKn ki laNat.
    stay that AF-Prg-work person personal name is said name
在那工作人名據說名
在那裡工作的人據說名叫Kaidan。
The person working there is said to be named Kaidan.

22. rahuay ka m<a>u-kinakaw mu-habahar.
    eagle AF-Prg-slow fly
老鷹慢飛
老鷹慢慢地飛。
The eagle was flying slowly.

23. taxu di kaidan a karikarid a ka, p<in>axuruma dadas rabax
    arrive at personal name field Conj Prf-plant sweet potato leaf
到人名園種地瓜葉
到了Kaidan的菜園，把小孩放在他所種的地瓜葉上。
Upon arrival at Kaidan's field, it left the baby on the leaves of sweet potatoes.

24. liaka ma-raxiw lia ki rahuay.
    then AF-escape Asp eagle
然後逃了老鷹
然後老鷹就逃走了。
Then the eagle escaped.
Pazih Texts and Songs

25. talawas lia ki kaidan kita sKn ka rahuay raa-razaw.
   raise head Asp name look is said eagle Red-pass
   据說 Kaidan 抬頭看見老鷹正在飛過去。
   It is said that Kaidan raised his head and saw the eagle passing over him.

26. tumala rakihan a m-aNit.
    hear baby AF-cry
    他聽見小孩的哭聲。
    He heard a baby crying.

27. “nima rakihan pai mini?”
    whose baby Q this
    「這是誰家的小孩？」
    “Whose baby is this?” (he thought).

28. kita?-Kn ka rakihan kaidida.
    see-PF baby over there
    他看見了那個小孩。
    He saw the baby over there.

29. liaka kalapu?-Kn ni kaidan lia.
    then hold-PF personal name Asp
    然後 Kaidan 把他抱起來。
    Then Kaidan held the baby in his arms.

30. kita sKn ka rubaN mamalKN, kaxa-saisim-an rabKx a rakihan.
    see said young boy KAXA-love-LF baby child
    據說一看是個男孩，很可愛的嬰兒。
    It is said that he found that it was a baby boy, a very lovely one.

31. asu-Kn di nisia xumak lia.
    bring-PF his home Asp
他把他带回家了。

He brought it home.
32. liaka “sasay naki pai mini? kuah a saa-pa-kan?”
then how I Q this none IF-Caus-eat
然後 如何 我 這個 沒 餵食
「我怎麼辦？沒有餵他的食物！」
"What shall I do? I have nothing to feed him with!" he thought.

33. liaka mu-dKNKdKN r<i>N>xaw lia.
then AF-cook Prf-congee Asp
然後 煮 稀飯 了
然後他就煮稀飯。
Then he cooked rice gruel.

34. m-ulka ka mu-dius taatiN a lamtak paka-lamik-Kn pa-kan-Kn.
AF-frist AF-scoop little rice liquid Caus-cool-PF Caus-eat-PF
先 CFN 一點點 飯湯 使涼 餵
他先舀出一點點飯湯來，使它涼了再餵食。
He scooped out a little rice liquid, and cooled it in order to feed the baby with it.

35. pa-kan-Kn lamtak ka mK-kKn ki rakihan isia.
Caus-eat-PF laquid AF-eat baby that
餵 飯湯 吃 孩 那
餵他飯湯，那嬰兒也吃了。
He fed the baby with it, and the baby ate it.

36. ma-rixaw lia ki r<i>N>xaw, duray-Kn paka-ma-rixaw-Kn, rimad-Kn pahar.
Sta-soft Asp Prf-congee grind-PF Caus-Sta-soft-PF mix-PF salt
爛 了 稀飯 揉 使爛 摻 鹽
他把稀飯揉爛了再加鹽巴
He massed the rice gruel, softened it, and mixed it with a little salt.

37. pa-kan-Kn mK-kKn ki rakihan a isia.
Caus-eat-PF AF-eat baby that
餵 吃 孩 那
餵他，那個小孩也吃了。
He fed the baby with it, and the baby ate it.

38. nahada ababaw raa-rapun.
exist above Red-take care
有上天在照顧。

God was taking care of him.

39. adaN a dali, dusa a dali, puzah a adaN a apu.
   one day two day come one old woman

第二天天來了一個老太婆。

On the second day, an old woman came along.

40. “kaidan, haiki nahada rakihan m-aNit kaidi nisiw-an dini.”
    name seem exist baby AF-cry at your-place-Nmz here

人名似乎有小孩哭在你住處這兒

「Kaidan，你這裡似乎有小孩在哭。」

“Kaidan, there seems to be a baby crying here in your house.”

41. kaidan ka, “d<in>KkKn di naki a p<in>axuruma dasas a rabax.
    name Prf-pick up I Prf-plant sweet potato leaf

人名揀我已種的地瓜葉

似乎挾老鷹放據說我種地瓜葉

a babaw. kalapu asu-Kn di naki a xumak. tata, sasay-Kn pai yaku
   above hold bring-PF my home aunt how-PF Q I

上抱帶我的家姨如何我

m-iba rakihan imini rKKnzaw aku, ini mausay mu-kukusa? riax-i ka
   AF-hold baby this only I not will go AF-work find-Imp

抱孩這只我不要去工作找

naki aunu ta-u-xumak saa-rapun rakihan imini.”
   I make Agt-house IF-take care child this

我做妻照顧孩這

Kaidan說，「在我所種的地瓜葉子上揀到的，他似乎被老鷹挾來丟在我所種的地瓜葉子上。我就把他抱回家了。阿婆，我只抱著這嬰孩而不工作怎麼辦呢？替我找個老婆照顧這個小孩吧！」

Kaidan said, ‘I picked it up on the leaves of sweet potatoes. It seemed to have been seized and left on the leaves of sweet potatoes by an eagle. I brought it home. What shall I do if I have to hold this
baby and cannot work? Please find me a wife to take care of this baby.”

42. apu a isia ka, “haw lia. KdKr,ini m-ara siw ka sasay-Kn laula?”

The old woman said, “Alright. It's true. What else could you do without marrying someone?”
43. liaka m-ukusa di namisiw a xumag- a taubarKt, mu-riax adaN a rubaN
then AF-go her home neighbor AF-find one young
然後去她的家鄰居找一年輕
a mamais kalayu sKn ki laNat.
lady female name said name
女女人名據說名
然後她就到她家的鄰居找到一個姑娘，據說名叫Kalayu。
Then she went to her neighbors and found a young lady named Kalayu.

44. “tia, tia ta-kita?-i kaxa-saisim-an adaN a saw rKKzaw mK-dKkKn
adaN go go let’s look KAXA-love-LF one person only AF-pick up one
go去咱看可愛一人只揀一
a rakihan. tia mi-kita,” lia ki apu a isia.
baby go AF-see Asp old woman that
孩去看婆那
「去！去！咱們去看一個人揀到一個可愛的嬰兒。去看！」那個老太婆說。
“Go! Let’s go and look at a cute baby picked up only by someone. Go and look at it!” the old woman said.

45. liaka mu-kusa mi-kita.
then AF-go AF-see
然後去看
然後他們去看。
Then they went there to look at it.

46. haw laila lia ki kalayu isia.
good thus Asp name that
好那樣了女人名那
Kalayu也很喜歡。
Kalayu was also fond of the baby.

47. xasKbuza dali ka ara?-K Kn lia. ara?-K Kn di xumak lia.
six day take-PF Asp take-PF home Asp
六天娶了娶家了
Pazih Texts and Songs

六天後他娶了她，娶到他家。
Six days later, he married her. She moved to his home.
女名和人名咱們取名咱
Kalayu和Kaidan商量，「咱們給他取名吧！」
Kalayu said to Kaidan, “Let’s name him!”
49. “haw. kulaNad-Kn ‘tun’ tasiaw.”
namePF pine maybe
好吧，就取名叫Tun吧！
“Fine! Name him ‘Tun’.”
50. tun ka riak a kahuy tubabaw, matKra tun sKna.
pine Good tree tall hard pine said
松好樹高硬松據說
tun（松）是好的樹，高大而又硬。
It is said the term ‘tun’ refers to a good plant (pine tree), tall and hard.
51. dusa mamais mamalKN saisim-an atun.
two female male love-LF name
夫妻兩人都疼Atun。
The couple loved Atun.
52. adaN a dali, adaN a ilas, adaN a kawas. taxu pasakKN-ay adaN a
one day one month one year till arrive-Fut one
一天一月一年到將到達一
kawas ka, ituku?-Kn saw lia ki kalayu.
year pregnant-PF person Asp female name
年懷孕了女人名
一天過一天，一個月過一個月，一年過一年。快到一年時，Kalayu懷孕了
Day after day, month after month, year after year, in less than a year, Kalayu became pregnant.
53. mayaw taxu isida ilas ka, parisan lia ki kalayu, parisan adaN a
not yet till ten month was born Asp name was born one
還沒到十月生了女人名生一
rubaN mamalKN.
young boy

103
Pazih Texts and Songs

幼小 男
不到十個月，Kalayu生了一個男嬰。
Kalayu had a baby boy in less than ten months.

54. du sa rakihan mamalKN pialay ka riak.
two child boy begin good
二 孩 男 開始 好
兩個男孩開始時很好。
In the beginning it was nice to have both boys.

55. du sa mamais mamalKN, saisim-an du sa rakihan.
two female male love-LF two child
二 女 男 疼 二 孩
男女兩人都疼兩個孩子。
The couple loved both children.

56. ma-taru lia ka ini aisiyyay lia ki ina.
Sta-big Asp not same Asp mother
大 了 不 相同 了 母
長大了母親就不同了。
As they grew up, the mother behaved differently.

57. ini xadu saisim-an atun, saisim-an p<in>arisan talima.
not much love-LF name love-LF Prf-born own
不 怎麼 疼 人名 疼 生 自己
她不怎麼疼愛阿敦，只疼自己生的。
She did not love Atun, but loved her own child.

58. talima p<in>arisan a rakihan mK-kKn risilaw a sumay, riak a
own Prf-born child AF-eat white rice good
自己 生 孩 吃 白 飯 好
saas-kKn: rumut, alaw, iu atun ka pa-kan-Kn durun, rimad-Kn taatih
a
side dish meat fish but name Caus-eat-PF bran mix-PF a little
菜 肉 魚 而 人名 使吃 糠 掃 一點
sumay, N<in>api tuasKKn a saa-kKn.
rice Prf-leftover spoiled side dish

104
飯 剩 酸臭 菜
自己生的孩子吃白飯，好的菜：肉、魚，而阿敦只給他吃米糠加一點點飯，剩下的酸臭的菜。
*Her own child was fed with white rice and good food: meat and fish, yet Atun was fed with bran mixed with a little rice, leftover or spoiled food.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

59. hada aba babaw raa-rapun.
   exist father above Red-take care
   有父上在照顧
   有上天在照顧。
   God was taking care of him.

60. mK-kKn ma-luhusu ki atun, bagKt tubabaw.
   AF-eat Sta-in that way name strong tall
   吃那樣人名強健高
   雖然阿敦吃的那些，卻長的強健又高大。
   Despite what Atun ate, he was strong and tall.

61. p<in>arisan talima rakihan mK-kKn riak, ma-kuris itKkn.
   Prf-born own child AF-eat good Sta-thin short
   自己生的孩子吃的好，卻又瘦又矮。
   (Kalayu's) own child ate good food, yet he was thin and short.

62. liaka puzah lia ki taubarKt, tata iu apu.
   then come Asp neighbor aunt and old woman
   然後來了鄰居姨婆
   然後鄰居的阿姨和老太婆來了。
   Then the neighbors and the old woman came.

63. mu-kusa di m<a>hadas, mi-kita yamisiw k<a>kKn ruNun-un.
   AF-go AF-Prg-have fun AF-see they Red-Prg-eat differently-PF
   她們去玩，看到他們吃的不同。
   When they visited them, they found that (the kids) eating differently.

64. maa-kuas lia ki yasia.
   Rec-talk Asp they
   他們議論紛紛。
   They talked about it.

65. adaN a dali liaka maa-kuas kani atun, "uzay p<in>arisan isiw a ina.
   one day then Rec-talk Obl name not Prf-born you mother
On a certain day, then they said to Atun, “She is not your own mother. You were picked up by them. Aidu is their own child. So far as we can tell, it is not good for you to keep staying here.”

Atun listened to what the old woman had said and kept it in his mind.

Until he was nineteen.

On a certain day, when his mother was not home, he said to his father, "Daddy, I would like to lead
Pazih Texts and Songs

“my own life,” Atun said.

69. aba ka, “mausay di asay pai siw?”
Father asked, “Where would you like to go?”

father will go where Q you
父要去何處 Q 你
父親問，「你要到哪裡去？」
70. “mausay taxu di asay a daxK ka, naki a laNat. ini ma-rukat
will go till where land Conj my destiny not AF-go out
要去到何處地我的命運不出去

talima? a daran.”
own Lig road
自己路
「走到什麼地方都是我的命。不出去闖自己的路（也不行）。」
“I shall go where my fate leads me to. (If) I don’t work my way out, (it won’t be good for me.)”

71. aba ka, taxi-bubuk a punu.
father Top TAXI-lower head
父低下頭
父親低下頭。

good in that way father you Top not we Prf-born you
好那樣父你不我們生你

d<in>KkKn niam di kari-karid-an rabKx a saw siw. kita sKn
Prf-pick up we Red-swidden field-Nmz baby person you look said
揀我們旱田嬰人你看據說

naki ka, k<in>ius rahuay adu?-un di p<in>axuruma dadas dida
I Prf-snatch baby put-PF Prf-plant sweet potato there
我挾嬰放種地瓜那邊

. haw, usa riax-i p<in>arisan isiw a ina aba. aubin a dali ka,
good go find-Imp Prf-born you mother father later day
好去找生你母父後來日

rii-riak-ay siw. hada aba babaw raa-rapun-ay isiw. aubin a dali
Red-good-Fut you exist Dad above Red-take care-Fut you later day
好你有父上面將照顧你後來日

maxu-ria-riak siw ka, alu kita?-i yamin.” lai ki kaidan a isia.
MAXU-Red-good you Conj come see-Imp we Asp name that
好你來看我們了人名那

「好吧！」父親說，「你確實不是我們生的。你是我們在旱田裡挾回來的嬰兒。我
看是老鷹挾來放在(我所)種的蕃薯那邊。好，去找你的生父母，將來你會過好日子。有上天照顧你。將來你過好日子，就來看我們。」

"Alright," the father said. "You are not our own child. We picked you up in the field when you were a baby. I believe you were seized by an eagle and left in my sweet potato field. All right, go and find your own parents. You'll lead a good life. May God bless you. When you come by a good fortune, come to see us," Kaidan said.

73. atun ka maxi-a-rKsK-rKsK.
name MAXI-Red-tears
人名 流淚
阿敦流淚。
Atun shed tears.

74. aba ka mu-kusa m-ara a-uku-kusa?-Kn a balax tatak, tadaw, sauki,
father AF-go AF-take A-Red-work:PF tool hoe knife scythe
父 去 拿 工作 工具 鎬 刀 鎬刀
yasam iu m-ara tatiN a paray.
axe and AF-take a little money
斧 和 拿 一點 錢
父親去拿工作用具：鎬頭、鐮刀、斧頭，又拿了一點錢（給阿敦）。
Father got some tools: a hoe, a knife, a scythe, an axe, and a little money and gave them to Atun.

75. "asu-i ki nisiw a sabusaw, siatu."
bring-imp your your coverlet clothes
帶 你的 被子 衣
「帶你的被子和衣服。」
"Take your coverlet and clothes."

76. "haw," laila ki atun.
fine in that way name
好 那樣 人名
阿敦說，「好。」
Atun said, "Yes."

77. dusa aba iu rikihan maa?-aNi?-aNIt.
two father and child Rec-Red-cry
二 父 和 子 哭
父子兩人哭了。
Both the father and the son cried.

阿敦拉著父親的手，就出發走了。

Atun held his father's hand and set out.
Pazih Texts and Songs

79. aba ka, mi-kita rakah kana zaa-zakay m-aNita lia.
father AF-see child Red-leave AF-cry Asp

The father saw the son leaving and cried.

80. adaN a dali, taxu supad- a dali, mi-kita adaN a subut.
One day till four day AF-see one spring

Day after day, on the fourth day, he saw a spring.

81. "a, riak a dalum haimini, tuxubKs a dalum. imini haka riak."

好水這甜水這真的好

「啊！這裡的水好，水甜。這裡好。」
"Yea, this is good water. It tastes good. This is really good."

82. mata di daya kita sKna ka ma-taru a subut.

He went up and saw a large spring there.

83. kita sKna ka taparax a kari-karit.

It is said that he saw a broad swidden field.

84. nahada tubabaw a saa-patu-xumak ka riak.

There was a higher place to build a house.

85. ta-patu-xuma?-ay dini lia ku.

Let's-build-house-Fut here Asp I
咱們蓋房，此地了，我

我在這裡蓋房子吧。

“Let's build a house here,” (he said to himself).

86. m-ara nisia tadaw mu-kusa mu-tamak kahuy, mu-tamak rahas anu paliN.

拿他刀去砍柴，砍菅蓁(茅草)做牆壁。

He cut trees with his knife and cut miscanthus for walls.

87. mu-tamak dahu lia, sKKsKkKt.

砍多了休

After he cut a lot, he was taking a rest.

88. liaka puzah adaN a rubaN mamais, nahani m-iliw dalum.

然後來—年輕女來挑水

A girl came to fetch water.

89. mi-kita liaka haiki p<atu-xuma?-ay. mi-kita rKKzaw.

她看見他似乎要蓋房子。她只看了一下。

She found that he was going to build a house. She simply took a look at it.

90. mu-kusa talima xumak ma-kuas nisia ina.

She went home and told her mother.

91. mu-kusa mi-kita lia ki ina ka, “rubaN mamalKN, sasay pai siw?”

去看了母，年輕男什麼Q你
Her mother went to look at it herself, and said to him, “Young man, what are you doing?”

“I shall build a house here.”
93. “p<a>uzah di asay pai siw?”
   Prg-come where Q you
   來何處Q你
   「你從哪裡來的？」
   “Where do you come from?”

94. atun ka, “sasay-Kn ma-kuas pai yaku?” “mata di maanu, mu-zakay name how-PF AF-say Q I from far AF-walk
   人名如何說Q我從遠走
   supad- a dali, haka taxu dini. mi-kita riag- a kari-karit lahaku.”
   four day true till here AF-see good Red-swidden field I
   四天真的到這裡看好農田
   阿敦（心裡想）, 「我要怎麼說呢？」他說, 「從很遠的地方走了四天才到此地，
   我看到好的田園。」
   Atun thought, “What shall I say?” (Then he said), "I came from far away. It took me four days to get here. I found a good field here."

95. tata isia ka, “riak. dini a daxK ka bagKt. paxuruma yadisaysay ka aunt that good here land fertile plant what Conj
   媳那好此地肥沃種什麼
   riak.”
   good
   好
   婦人說, 「好！這裡的地很肥沃,種什麼都長的好。」
   The woman said, “Good, the land is fertile here. Whatever you plant, it grows well.”

96. mi-kita atun a riag- a gagam.
   AF-see name good stature
   看人名好身材
   她看見阿敦一表人才。
   She found Atun had a good stature.

97. liaka pa-dudu, “xaima a saw pai siw ?”
   then PA-ask how many people Q you
   然後問多少人Q你
   然後她問道, 「你幾個人？」
Then she asked him, “How many people do you have?”
阿敦說，「我只有自己一個人。」
Atun said, "Only myself."

那婦人看了阿敦工作之後就回家了。
The woman saw Atun working and then went home.

據說她的姑娘名叫SabuN。
It is said that her girl's name was Sabung.

她聽見父母交談。
She heard of her parents discussing.

m-iliw dalum di subudan dida.
The girl went to do laundry and fetch water from the spring.

SabuN's mother called on an old woman and said to her, "Go to the place near the spring. There is a young man there. Tell him that we would like to marry our daughter to him. He looks like a good young man. Please talk to him."

The old woman said, "Yes," and went to Atun.

Atun agreed (to the marriage.)
fine in that way then AF-take Asp
好那樣然後娶了
他們說好了就娶她了。
*When all agreed, he married her.*

108. **dusa mamais mamal** **KN** **ma-hapKt** **mu-kukusa** **di namisiw** **a kari-karit.**
two lady man Sta-diligent AF-work their swidden field
二女男勤奮工作他們的旱田
男女兩人在他們的旱田認真的工作。
*Both the boy and girl worked hard on the swidden field.*

109. **paxuruma** **binayu** **a** **mulasi,** **paxuruma** **piaxun,** **dadas,** **tawtaw,**
plant mountain rice plant plant millet sweet potato peanut
種山稻種小米地瓜花生
xalam, yaadisaysay.
vegetable various things
蔬菜各種
在山上種稻、種小米、地瓜、花生、蔬菜等等。
*They planted rice, millet, sweet potatoes, peanuts, vegetables, etc.*

110. **imini ka atun a aba** **p<in>aku** **as** **a** **rahan,** “**atun,** aubin a dali”
this name father Prf-talk word later day
這男名父講話人名後來天
ka, **rii-riak-ay** **siw.** **maxu-ria-riak-ay** **siw.** **m-ara** **riak** **a** **mamais** **siw**
Red-good-Fut you MAXU-Red-good-Fut you AF-take good lady you
將會好你幸福你娶好女你
ka, **rii-riak-ay,** **riag- a** **karum-xumak.”**
Red-good-Fut good family
將會好好家庭
這就是阿敦的父親說的話，「阿敦，日後你會好，你會幸福。你娶個好妻子，就會好，有好家庭。」
*This is what Atun’s father had said to him, “Atun, you will lead a good life. You will have good luck. When you get a good wife, you will be fine with a good family.”*

111. **taxaw uhuni ka haiki nisia aba** **p<in>akuas** **a** **rahan.**
until now seem his father Prf-talk word
到現在似乎他的父講話

119
到現在似乎他父親所祝福的話都應驗了。
Up to now all his father's words materialized then.

112. dusa ka maa-zKbKzKp mamais mamalKN.
     two Rec-chest woman man
     男女 合作 女 男
     The man and woman cooperated with each other.

113. parisan rubaN mamalKN, rubaN mamais, maxu-nia-riak.
     was born one boy one girl MAXU-Red-good
     生 一 男 一 女 健康
     They had a son and a daughter, both strong and healthy.

114. dadua lia. taxaw dini ki naki a k<in>awas.
     all Asp up to here my Prf-word
     全部 了 到 此 我的 話
     全部說完了。我的話到此為止。
     That is all. My story ends here.
Text 8. *pinatula* 捕鳗 *Catching an Eel*

Narrated by Pan Jin-yu (female, 86) on Jan. 7, 1999
Recorded in Auran, Puli by Paul Li

潘金玉口述講解 (1999.1.7)，按此為五十年前事實的陳述

李壬癸記錄

地點：埔里愛蘭

1. ta-du-du?-aw uhuza naki a baba mausay pa-tilikat di adaN a let’s-talk-Fut before my Lig uncle will go set-a trap Loc one Lig ma-taaru a luduk.
   Sta-big pond
d大潭
咱們要講從前我舅舅要到潭邊放陷阱。

We shall talk about my uncle, who was going to set a trap by a big pond, in the past.

2. ludug- a k<in>i-xid-an dahu a sabun, hayahay, xasi, rabKx pond Prf-nearby-Loc a lot grass stalks of miscanthus miscanthus tender
   a hayahay. stalks of miscanthus
   茅莖
在潭邊有青草、粗茅莖、細茅草、嫩茅草。

Nearby the pond, there was a lot of grass, (two types of) miscanthus, and new growth of miscanthus.

3. naki a baba isia ka, mausay pa-tilikat, mu-razaw mata dida.
   my uncle that Top will go set-a trap AF-pass by from there
   我的 舅 那 要去 放陷阱 經過 從那兒
我舅舅要去放陷阱，打從那裡經過。

My uncle was going to set traps, passing by that area.

4. mi-kita sabun isia ki naki a baba, kita sKña haiky r<in>iux AF-see grass that Nom my uncle look said Conj seem Prf-slide over
   看草那我的舅看據說好像爬過
   KzKd- a daran.
Pazih Texts and Songs

snake Lig road
蛇 路
我舅舅看到那些青草好像蛇爬過的路。
*My uncle found that the grass seemed to have been slid over by a snake.*
5. naki a baba mi-kita sabun a imini haiki k<in>an KzKt ka, ini
my uncle AF-see grass here seem Prf-eat snake Conj not

我的舅看草這兒好像吃過蛇不

mK-kKn sabun ki KzKt.
AF-eat grass snake

吃草蛇

我舅舅看到這些青草好像蛇吃過的，可是蛇卻不吃草。
My uncle found that the grass seemed to have been nipped by a snake, yet a snake did not eat grass.

6. kita sKn r<in>iux a daran ka xamaxam-Kn ka kuiNKx ki daran.
lood is said Prf-slide over road touch-PF sticky road

看據說爬路摸粘粘路

他看爬行過的路，用手一摸是粘粘的。
He looked at the path that had been slid over, and it was sticky when he touched it.

7. "kuiNKx asay pai mini ha?"1 maxa-kK-kKla ma-sKzKm.
sticky what Q this MAXA-Red-think Sta-long

粘什麼Q這想久
「這個粘粘的是什麼？」他想了很久。
“What is this sticky stuff?” he considered it for a long time.

8. haiki uzay KzKl a daran. haiki r<in>iux tula a daran lia.
seem not snake road seem Prf-slide over eel road Asp

好像不是蛇路好像滑行鰻路了

好像不是蛇的路，好像是鰻爬過的。
It did not seem to be a path of the snake, but rather slid over by an eel.

9. riNis-Kn mi-kita taxaw rudug a k<in>ixid-an liaka kuah lia ki daran.
check-PF AF-see pond Prf-nearby-Loc then none Asp road

查看看到潭旁然後沒了路

他尋查看一直到潭邊就沒有路了。

---

1 The form ha indicates a surprise or a question in mind. It may be a loan from Taiwanese hā, which indicates a surprise or question.
Pazih Texts and Songs

He checked it up to the side of the pond and then he lost the track of the path.
10. naki a baba ka, “uzay KzKt mini, tula haimini mK-kKn sabun, mK-kKn
my uncle not snake this eel this AF-eat grass AF-eat
我的舅 不 蛇 這 鰻 這 吃 草 吃
hayahay,” lia ki naki a baba isia maxa-kK-kKla.
stalks of miscanthus Asp Nom my uncle that MAXA-Red-think
茅莖 我的 舅 那 想
我舅舅心裡想，「這不是蛇，這是鰻魚，才會吃青草和茅草。」
My uncle thought, “This is not a snake, but rather an eel that will nip grass and miscanthus.”

11. liaka mu-pukupuk tamaku lia ki naki a baba isia.
then AF-smoke tobacco Asp my uncle that
然後 抽 菸 了 我的 舅 那
然後我的舅舅就抽菸了。
Then my uncle smoked.

not snake MAXA-Red-think AF-go Loc home Asp
不是 蛇 想 去 家 了
他想，「那不是蛇。」就回家了。
"It was not a snake," he thought and returned home.

13. mu-riax halipid- a kaxa xanixanisay, zupay-Kn kamalaN xanixanisay
haiki
AF-find thin iron several sharpen-PF sharp several seem
找 薄 鐵 幾個 磨 利 幾個 好像
tadaw.
knife
他找了幾根薄鐵把它們磨利了，像刀一樣地利。
He looked for several thin pieces of iron and sharpened them until they became as sharp as knives.

14. du-dusa? a dali a ka mu-kusa inaN sibad-Kn di r<in>iux a
Red-second day Top AF-go again put into order-PF Prf-slide over
第二 天 去 再 排好 滑行
daran a isia.
road that
第二天他再去把它們（薄鐵）排好在（鱻魚）滑行的路上。

On the second day, he went there again to lay them on the path that had been slid over.
15. sibad-Kn xanixanisay haiki tadaw a isia lia.
put in order-PF several like knife that Asp
He laid several pieces (of thin iron) as sharp as knives.

16. sibad-Kn sarawan ka nahani?-ay.
put in order-PF tomorrow come-Fut
Having laid them, he would return the next day.

17. mausay mu-sibat isia ka m-asu abu lia.
will go AF-put in order then AF-bring ash Asp
He was going to lay them, he brought ashes with him.

18. taxu hayahay a dida ka di daran habu?-Kn abu la.
till stalks of miscanthus there road sprinkle-PF ash
He sprinkled ashes on the path leading to the miscanthus.

ash Sta-unsMOOTH there not AF-slide over Asp
灰使到那裡的（路）澀澀的，就不能滑行了。
The ashes were unsmooth and they were hard to slide on.

20. taxu-ripuN dida lia.
TAXU-roll over there Asp
牠在那裡翻滾了。
(The eel) rolled over it.

21. kita sKn ka ma-taru a tula ka dida lia.
look said Sta-big eel there
He found a big eel there.

As it was sliding (over the path), its belly was cut by the sharp knives.

It could not slide where there were ashes.

It kept rolling over there.

My uncle found that it was an eel, a very big eel.
27. nahaza saa-rubus. liaka rubus-Kn lia.

exist IF-bag then put into a bag-PF Asp

有麻袋然後裝袋了

他有麻袋，然後他把牠裝在麻袋裡。

*He had a bag, and then he put it into the bag.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

28. liaka apa?-Kn asu-un di xumak lia.
then carry-PF bring-PF home Asp
然後揹 帶 家 了
然後他揹回家了。
Then he carried it home on his back.

29. naki a tata ka mu-kusa di naamisiw a rKtKn maa-kuas lia. maa-kuas
my aunt AF-go their village Rec-tell Asp Rec-tell
我的 姨媽 去 她們 村 告訴 了 告訴
kani³ saw.
people
人
我姨媽去告訴她村（蜈蚣崗）中的人了。
My aunt went to tell the other villagers.

30. maaka-hata-hatan dadua lia.
Rec-Red-happy all Asp
高興 大家 了
大家都很高興。
All of them were pleased.

31. halupas iu ma-taru lia ki tula.
long and Sta-big Asp Nom eel
長 和 大 了 鰻魚
鰻魚又長又大。
The eel was long and big.

32. naki a baba isia ka sKnaw-Kn paka-ma-sKzaw-Kn.
my uncle that wash-PF Caus-Sta-clean-PF
我的 舅 那 洗 弄乾淨
我那個舅舅把牠洗乾淨了。
My uncle rinsed it and cleaned it.

33. puzah mi-kita a saw ka xizib-Kn baxa?-Kn.

---
³ The form kani is an oblique marker for a following person.
Everyone who came to look at it was given a piece (of the eel).

My older maternal uncle gave us some eel meat.

I was still very young then.

I don't know how old I was.
Pazih Texts and Songs

B. Kaxabu Text Recorded by Paul Li

Text 9. 遷移到埔里 Moving to Puli

Narrated by Pan Jun-nai (male, 83) on Jan.16, 1988
Recorded in Shou-cheng, Puli by Paul Li
潘郡乃 (男，83歲）口述、解說 (1988.1.16)
李壬癸記錄

地點：埔里鎮守城份

1. kalu? kaxabu a hahn mu-kawas.
   use word AF-talk
   用話口講
   (I'll) talk in Kaxabu.

   let's-tell-Imp ancient us
   講論起古代咱
   Let's talk about our past.

3. sii taba? ki ni'am a xumak, kaxu? maxa-kuak ?isia lia ki mu-puzah
   at village we Lig home until become-poor then Asp AF-come
   在村我們家到變貧那時了來
   purisia?:
   place name
   埔里社
   In the village became so poor that we moved to Puli.

   till one period AF-come Asp Japanese

---

1 The function of the function word nu in this sentence is not clear. It may not be a genitive marker, as illustrated in Li and Tsuchida (2001:216). Cf. also the nu in the ritual songs of ayan; see B in Part Two.
到一段來了日本人
After a certain period of time, the Japanese came.

5. ?isia? lia ki maapuphiat, midaahin.
then    Asp struggle    frighten
那時了拼命驚怕
那時大家拼命,很怕(被日本人所殺)。
At that time (the people) were struggling, as they were very frightened.

then Asp that till    AF-obey Asp then    quiet
那時了那到服從了那時安靜
那時服從了(日本人),(大家)才安靜下來。
Then they followed (the regulations of the Japanese), and then they bacame quiet.

7. xKsKtlia sia? huahu paka-yak u sau?.
quiet Asp that    Japanese Caus-good people
安靜了那日本人使好人
安靜下來時,日本人使人好(照顧人)。
As they became quiet, the Japanese were nice to them.

8. misiu? lia ki maki zaaxu? maa-taNis.
then Asp and aborigines Rec-fight against
那時了和與生番對抗,打仗
那才和生番對抗/打仗。
Then they fought against the mountain aborigines.

9. mu-puzah zaaxu? nahani? m(u)-tahay sau?.
AF-come aborigines come AF-kill people
來生番來殺人
The mountain aborigines came to kill (Pazih) people.

10. mu-puzah zaaxu?, huahu ki maa-taus/maa-taNis. disiwdisiw nahaza? saa?
AF-come aborigines Japanese Rec-fight everywhere exist
來生番日本人相鬥對抗到處有
Pazih Texts and Songs

idaahin.
fear
怕
生番來了，日本人和他們打仗。到處有得怕。
When the mountain aborigines came, the Japanese fought against them, and there was fear everywhere.
AF-Red-laugh Asp place name person good Prg-live-Nmz
高興 了 埔里 人 好 住
埔里人很高興，埔里是個好住處。
*The people in Puli were then happy, as Puli was a nice place to live.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

C. Pazih Texts Recorded by Shigeru Tsuchida

Text 1. 兩個傻人 Two Stupid Men

Narrated by Taruat (female, 78)
Recorded in Auran, Puli in November 1969 by S. Tsuchida

潘詹梅（女，78歲）口述，解說
土田滋記錄 1969年11月

地點：埔里愛蘭

   現在要講故事
   Now, I'll tell (you) an old story.

2. m<k>aka-kuwas-ay uhuza a saw.
   講古時人
   I shall talk about ancient people.

3. dusa maatu-batan.
   他們兩人是朋友
   The two were friends with each other.

4. masi-karum binayu.
   他們到山上去。
   (They) went into the mountains.

5. “tia, t-ara-i luxut.”
   咱們捉吧鹿
   Let's catch deer!
"Now, let's catch deer!"
Pazih Texts and Songs

6. dusa a batan, mu-kusa masi-karum di binayu, riak a m-ara turu
   two Lig friend AF-go AF-enter Loc mountain good Lig AF-take three
   a luxut.
   Lig deer

   兩個朋友到山上去了，幸運地捕到了三隻鹿。
   The two friends, going into the mountains, fortunately caught three deer.

7. ma-hata-hatan laiki dusa a yaasia i.
   AF-Red-laugh thus two Lig those
   高興 那樣 二 他們
   他們兩人都很高興。
   Those two were therefore very happy.

   now let's-go out-Lmp Loc path Lig yonder Conj now let's-divide-Fut
   咱們出去吧 路 那邊 咱們分
   好吧，咱們出去到那邊路上去分吧！
   “Now, let's go out to the path over there and let's divide them into two!”

9. ma-rukat di daran lia.
   AF-go out Loc path Asp
   他們出去走到了路上了。
   (They) went out to the path.

10. m-ara turu a luxut ka, dusa a saw.
    AF-catch three Lig deer Conj two Lig person
    捕 三鹿 二 人
    他們捕到了三隻鹿，卻只有兩個人。
    (They) caught three deer, but (there were) two people.

11. duu-dusa luxut, ma-mKrKk mu-dusa.
    Red-halve deer Sta-unable AF-divide into two
    分成兩份 鹿 不能 分
    他們要把鹿分成兩份，可是辦不到。

(They) tried to divide the deer into two, but couldn't do it.
Pazih Texts and Songs

12. huruhur-un dua dini laiki adadumud- a luxud- a isia K. drag-PF that yonder here thus only one Lig deer Lig that eh

那一個人把那第三隻鹿拖到他那邊去。
So that man here dragged the third deer (to himself).

13. huruhur sKn di adang a dakal ka, “nisiw ka dusa lia, naki ka drag said Loc one Lig front Conj yours Top two Asp mine Top

只有一隻

當他拖到他前面時，另一個人說道，「你的有兩隻，而我的卻只有一隻。」
When he dragged it to the front of him, (the other said,) "Yours is two now, but mine is only one."

14. adaN a isia lia, huruhur sKn di nisia a dakal lia ka, “isiw ka One Lig that Asp drag said to his Lig front Asp Conj you Top

當另一個人把它拖到他那邊去，另外一個人就說，「你有兩隻，可是我卻只有一隻。」
When another guy dragged (the deer) to the front of him, (the other) thus said, "You (have) two, but I (have) only one."

15. “aa, nita a mu-dusa ka, ini ma-iKkKt lia. sasai-n1 lia?” oh ours Lig AF-divide Top not MA-right Asp what to do-PF Asp

「哎呀，我們的分法不對。怎麼辦呢？」
"Oh, our way of dividing is not right. What should we do?"

16. maa-xakKkKla.
AF/Rec-think

---

1 The form sasai-n 'what to do-PF' is also realized as sasai?-Kn; see Li and Tsuchida (2001:269).
17. tuutua¹² nahada maaxi-bariw ma-kKJKm a alaw in-iliw a just then there is AF-sell Sta-salty Lig fish Prf-carry on pole/PF Lig
碰巧 有 賣 鹹 魷 挑
saw raa-razaw.人 經過
碰巧那時候有一個挑著鹹魚在賣的人路過。
Right at that moment a man who sold salted fish carried on the pole happened to pass by.

18. mi-kita nasia duu-dusa luxut.
AF-see their Red-two deer
他看見他們在分鹿。
He saw them dividing the deer into two.

19. pa-kizih la nisia a in-iliw laiki saw a isia i. Caus-descend Asp his Lig Prf-carry on pole/PF thus person Lig that 放下 他的 挑 那樣 人 那個
那個人放下了挑在扁擔上的東西。
That man put down what he was carrying on the pole.

20. riak ka, ara sKn laiki adaN a luxut, huruhur sKn di nisia a dakal.
好 Top take said thus one Lig deer drag said to his Lig front 京都 擠說 那樣 一 鹿 擠說 他的 前面
幸而他把第三隻鹿拖到他的前面去。
It was good that he took one deer and dragged it to his front.

AF-do like this Conj good 這樣做 好
這樣做 好

² The form tuutua is a loan word from Taiwanese tutu-a 'just right, just at that moment'.
Pazih Texts and Songs

「這樣就好了！」
“If we do like this, it'll be good.”

22. “aa, riak, riak, riak. ma-luhusu ka riak.”
Ah good good good AF-do like that Conj good

「啊，好極了，那樣就好了！」
“Ah, good, good, good! If we do like that, it is good.”

23. “aa, ina mu-puzah mu-ulasiw ka, ini tahayak niam a
Ah, if AF-come AF-lead you Conj not tired we/Gen Lig

「要是你早一點來的話，我們就不必分得這麼累了。好極了！」
“If you had come here earlier, we would not have become tired out with our dividing them. Good, good, good!”
Text 2. 母豹之愛  The Great Motherly Love

Narrated by Taruat (female, age 78)
Recorded and transcribed by Shigeru Tsuchida in November 1969
Interpreted by Pan Jin-yu and translated by Paul Li in 1997

1. uhuni ka d<a>udu?-ay nu uhuza a paa-suku-an.
   現在 要講 古時 故事
   Now (I) shall talk about an old story.

2. uhuza ka nahada adadumud- a saw.
   古時 有 一 人
   There was a person in the past.

3. tausay maa-hadas bii-binyu na, maa-xakKkKla sukarum la di binayu.
   去吧 遊玩 山 想 進去 山
   He was going to travel to the mountains and he did.

4. pulalawa riak a marukad- a NaraNa a rakihan lia hinauriak.
   一會兒 好 出來 豹仔了 漂亮
   In a moment a pretty baby leopard came out.

5. kalapu?-un nia sKx nisia dakal lia.
   抱了 據說 他的 前了
   據說他把牠抱起來在他的胸前。
It is said that he held it in his arms.
6. ma-hata-hatan pulalawa, ah tumala di binayu a pudadKk a daxK lia.
   Sta-Red-laugh a while hear L mount Lig steps Lig land Asp
   他才高興了一會兒，就聽見山上腳步聲。
   He was pleased for a while before he heard of the steps in the mountain.

7. m-aNit lai k raNaraN a xipu a isia i, rii-riax nisia rakihan nia
   AF-cry thus leopard Lig female Lig that Red-seek her child Asp
   那隻母豹哭叫著，正在找牠的孩子，聞到了人的氣味。
   The mother leopard cried, was looking for her baby and smelled the odor of a man.

8. “ah, aidi asay ki naki a rakihan lia?”
   Oh! stay where Nom my Lig baby Asp
   「啊！我的孩子在哪裡呢？」
   “Where is my baby?”

9. kialih kialih lia.
   near near Asp
   牠愈來愈接近了。
   It was getting closer and closer.

10. ma-NKsKl lai ki saw a isia i.
    Sta-frighten Asp Nom man Lig that
    那個人怕了。
    The man was frightened.

11. xatukul di puNu kahuy lia.
    climb on trunk tree Asp
    爬上去樹幹樹了

145
He climbed a tree.

他爬到了樹上。
   Oh! AF-come Asp Conj Red-eat-PF by it Asp I Sta-afraid
   來 了 吃 牠 我 怕
   「啊！如果牠來了，我一定會被吃掉。」他很怕。
   “Oh! It has comes, I'll be eaten up by her,” he was afraid.

13. ma-xatukul di puNu kahuy lia.
   AF-climb on trunk tree Asp
   爬上去 樹幹 樹
   他爬到樹上了。
   He climbed a tree.

14. pulalawa lia ka pasakKn lai ki raNaraN a isia i.
   a while Asp Conj arrive Asp Nom leopard Lig that
   一會兒 了 到達 豹 那
   一會兒功夫，那隻豹就到了。
   In no moment the leopard arrived.

15. talawas na mi-kita namisiw a rakihan aidi babaw kahuy lia ka,
   raise head AF-see her Lig baby at above tree Asp Conj
   抬頭 看 牠的 小孩 在 上 樹
   m-aNit ma-taru a m-aNit lia, mu-huni lia.
   AF-cry Sta-big Lig AF-cry Asp AF-cry loudly Asp
   哭 大 哭 了 響亮
   牠抬頭看見牠的小豹子在樹上，牠就大聲地嚎叫。
   Raising her head, she saw her baby on the tree and cried. She cried very loudly.

16. ma-sKdKr di puNu kahuy.
   AF-turn around on trunk tree
   繞著轉 樹幹 樹
   牠繞著樹頭轉。
   She turned around the tree.

17. pulalawa lia ka NaraNar-Kn laiki g<a>irigir u puNu kahuy lia.
   a while Asp Conj bite-PF thus Prg-saw trunk tree Asp
   一會兒 了 噴咬 如此 錯 樹幹 樹 了
   過一會兒，牠噴咬樹頭想要把它咬斷。
In a moment she bit crunching the trunk of the tree.
18. saw a isia lia ka aidi babaw puNu kahuy ma-NKsKn lia.


20. pulalawa lia ka ma-sKdKr inah lia ka masi-buri-burit di a while Asp Conj AF-turn around again Asp Conj MASI-Red-turn around

21. xulaxa?-Kn, ini mari-kazay.

22. saw a isia aidi babaw kahuy ka, rikat la paNa kahuy, tK?Kn

He waited, but she did not move.

He waited, but she did not move.
Pazih Texts and Songs

據說眼沒動
那個人就在樹上折了樹枝投掷牠的眼睛，但牠沒動。
*The man on the tree broke a branch and threw it at her eyes, but she did not move.*
23. ara la minah, tK?KN sKKn, ini mari-kazay.
   take Asp again throw said not MARI-move
   他再拿（樹枝）投擲，牠仍然不動。
   *He took (a branch) again and threw it at her, but she still did not move.*

   times-three throw-PF to her head AF-stop not MARI-move Asp die Asp
   第三次投擲牠的頭，牠仍然靜止不動。原來牠已死了。
   *The third time he threw (a branch) at her head, and she did not move. She had died.*

25. kita sKKn purihat lia, ma-lalKN ini mari-kazay. mi-kizih laiki saw
   see said die Asp AF-stop not MARI-move AF-come down thus man
   看據說死了一停沒動下來如此人
   a isia i.
   Lig that
   那
   看牠死了不動，那人就下來了。
   *He found it dead, staying (there) without moving. The man came down (the tree).*

26. kita sKKn, xamaxam sKKn isia ma-lalKN. aa purihat lia.
   look said touch said she AF-stop die Asp
   看據說摸據說牠停死了
   看牠，摸牠，牠都靜止不動，已經死了。
   *He looked at her, touched her, and she did not move. She has died.*

27. isia laiki saw a isia i, ara?-Kn laiki raNaraN a isia ka apa?-KN
   that man Lig that take-PF thus leopard Lig that Conj carry-PF
   那人那拿如此豹那揹
   di aubil lia.
   at behind Asp
   後面了
   那個人把豹揹在後面。
   *Then that man took the leopard and carried it on his back.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

28. m-ukusa di m<a>a-sikarum-ay di nimisiw a rKtKn lia.
AF-go at AF-Prgr-enter-Fut at his Lig village Asp
去 進入 他的 村莊 了

He left and entered his village.

29. kita laiki saw ka, “asay pai misiw? asay ki m-ara raNaraN pai siw?”
see thus people Conj what Q that how AF-take leopard Q you
看 如此 人 什麼 那 如何 捉 拿 豹 你
ki ini mati-patus, ini mati-rawil ka, [ta] paara isia a raNaraN?
not carry-gun not carry-arrow Conj catch that Lig leopard
沒 帶槍 沒 帶箭 捉 那 豹
apa?-Kn ki azaN, iba?-Kn ki adaN.
carry-PF Nom one hold-PF Nom one
揹 — 抱 —

When the villagers saw him, they asked, “What is that? How did you catch the leopards? You didn't carry a gun or arrows, yet you caught the leopards. You carried one on the back and held one in your arms.”

30. m-ukusa laiki nimisiw a rKtKn a saw, mi-kita lia, dahu a saw
AF-go thus his Lig village Lig people AF-see Asp many Lig people
go 他的 村莊 人 看 了 多 人
di namisiw a xuma lia.
at his Lig house Asp
他的 家 了

The man's villagers went to look at them, and many people went to his house.

31. kita sKn, “aa asay ki na ma-gizKm a saw pai siw?”
look said oh what Nom Sta-capable Lig man Q you
看 據說 怎麼 強健,能幹 人 你

They looked at them and said, “How come you are such a capable man?”
32. m-ara raNaraN laila isia laiki saw dahu a m-ukusa mi-kita lia. AF-take leopard so he thus people many Lig AF-go AF-see Asp
捉 豹 那樣 他 如此 人 多 去 看 了
那人捉到豹子，很多人去看。
He caught the leopards, and many villagers went to take a look.
Pazih Texts and Songs

33. nahada kii-kita saw a takarad- a isia lia ka, "ii maana. have Red-look people Lig doctor Lig that Asp Conj wait
ta-padudu-ay isiw naki. riak say? ta-burax-aw naki nimu [nisiw] a let's-ask-Fut you I good Q let's-dissect-Fut I your your Lig
让我看 你 我 好 咱解剖 我 你們的 你的
in-ara a raNaraN a imini. riak say?" Prf-catch Lig leopard Lig this good Q捉 豹 這 好
去看的人當中有個醫生，他說，「且慢！我要向你請教一下，好嗎？我要解剖你捉到的豹子，好嗎？」
Among the ones looking at (the leopards), there was a doctor. He said, "Wait a minute. I'd like to ask your permission. I'd like to dissect the leopard you caught. Is that alright?"

34. saw a isia ka, "haw, burax-il ta-kita?-aw mu?-asay ki ma-luhuni," man Lig that Conj fine dissect-imp we-see-Fut AF-what AF-this way人 那 好 解剖 咱們看 怎麼 這樣
捉 豹 還 好
那人說，「好，你解剖吧！咱們要看看怎麼會這樣」
The man said, "Fine! Dissect it! Let's see why that is so."

35. riak a burax-Kn u takarad- a isia laiki raNaraN a isia i. good Lig dissect-PF doctor Lig that leopard Lig that好 解剖 醫生 那 豹 那
好在那個醫生解剖了那隻豹子。
It's good that the doctor dissected the leopard.

36. kita sKn laiki di rizik a babu a imisiw ka, kipud-un usKIKm look said thus in inside Lig heart Lig her Conj wrap-PF fat
看 據說 如此 裡面 心 牠的 包 脂肪
laiki babu a isia i ki purihat. thus heart Lig her die
如此 心 牠的 死

154
It is said that he found that her heart was wrapped up by fat, and she died of it.
37. ma-luhuni haimini, saisim-an a rakihan.
   This is the reason: she loved her baby (too much).

38. maaxa-razaw maxa-kK-kKla lai lia, imisiw laiki kipud-un u sKkKm laiki
   She thought so much of her baby that her heart was wrapped up by fat and she died of it.

39. ki takarad-a isia m<a>a-kuas i, “ma-luhuni ki nita x=in>a-K-kKla
   The doctor said, “If we are too worried like this, we may die.”
Text 3. 賞大魚 Catching A Big Fish

Narrated by Pan Wan-ji (male, 87)
Recorded by Shigeru Tsuchida in 1969
Interpreted by Pan Jin-yu and translated by Paul Li in 1997.

1. ta-dudu?-aw rahan hakKhakKzKN paa-subil.
   Let's talk story ancestors pass-down
   咱們講祖先流傳下來的話。
   Let's talk about an old story passed down by the ancestors.

2. iu ki rubaN u mamalKN isia la i, damuri rarKsKt.
   and Nom young Lig man that already personal name
   並 年輕 男 那個 人名
   有一個男青年名字叫 Damuri RarKsKt。
   There was a young man named Damuri RarK'sKt.

3. maa-kuas namisiw ina aba, “mausay aku mu-ririx daxK di asay
   Rec-tell his mother father will go | AF-search land at where
   講 他們的 母 父 去 我 探巡 土地 在 何處
   他對他的父母說，「我要去探看地方，哪裡才是溪流的源頭。」
   He said to his parents, “I shall go and search for the land where the river originates.”

4. isia laiki m-a-usa?-ay lia.
   then thus AF-Prg-go-Fut Asp
   那時 如此 去了
   他說了就要走了。
   Then he left.

5. m-a-apa?-ay buzux rawil lia.

Pazih Texts and Songs

158

6. mausay la isia.
will go Asp he
要去了他
他要去了。
He was going.

7. dulla lia mata di zaxi-zaxi, mata di dapi-dapi, mata raxu-raxuN.
go Asp from at Red-bushy from at Red-cliff from Red-rivers
他去了。經過崎嶇不平。經過懸崖。經過河
He went through bushy places, along cliffs and crossed rivers.

8. tuhuliN ma-riaux ma-xatukul p<a>a-sakKI-ay di puupuh raxuN.
thrubush AF-go down AF-climb PA-Prg-arrive-Fut at origin river
沿路雜草叢生。上坡下坡。快到溪的源頭了。
He went through bushes, descended and ascended mountains and finally arrived at the origin of the river.

9. kii-kita’-ay ma-ngayah rumaw ilia.
Red-see-Fut Sta-blue lake Asp
在看綠色的水潭。
He was looking at a blue lake.

10. “haw lia maa-baza asay pai dini lia.”
good Asp AF-know where Q here Asp
好了。知道此地是什麼地方了。
“Good! I know now where this is.”

11. ma-rikazay a dalum. “imini lia.”
AF-move water this Asp
他要揹弓箭了。
He was carrying a bow and arrows.
水在動。 (他說，) 「是這裡了。」

The water was moving. "That's it!"
12. ki rubang mamalKN isia i, taadKpKday mana-ria-riak, kii-kita?-ay
Nom young man that do-well MANA-Red-good Red-see-Fut

年輕 男 那個 仔細看 好好地 看

tuua kuadKN ma-taru a alaw.
just surprising Sta-big Lig fish
剛巧 驚訝 大 魚

那年輕人仔細看著，正好看到令人驚奇的大魚。
The young man was looking at the lake very carefully, and he saw a surprisingly big fish.

13. isia laiki paa-kizih-ay in-apa a buzux rawil.
then Caus-low-Fut Prf-carry Lig bow arrow

那時 如此 放下 揹 弓 箭

他放下了所揹的弓箭。
So, he put down the bow and arrows carried on his back.

14. isia laiki kaa-kauN-ay lia.
then thus Red-draw a bow-Fut Asp

那時 如此 正要以弓射 了

他正準備要用弓射。
Then he drew a bow to the full.

15. i rakad-Kn nia iruma?-Kn lia.
shot-PF Asp found-PF Asp

射 了 找到 了

他射了牠也找到了牠。
He shot it and got it.

16. haw lia mi-xabaxap paxu-riupuN lia.
good Asp AF-float PAXU-turn over Asp

好了 浮 翻來翻去 了

好了，(魚)浮起來翻來翻去。
(The fish) floated and turned over its body.

17. asaila, duasaila. ara, pi-dKkKdKk lia. ini kita?-an nia.¹

¹ The initial of the aspect marker lia is assimilated to the preceding consonant n as nia.
161

what what happened oh! PI-sink Asp not see-LF Asp
什麼怎麼了 哎呀 沉下去 了 不 見 了
怎麼了？哎呀！（魚）沉下去了，不見了。
What? What happened? (The fish) sank and became invisible.

18."anuy aa kuadKN a alaw a imini,” isia lia ki mati-zKNKd- a
pity surprising Lig fish Lig this then Asp Nom MATI-regret Lig
可惜 意外 魚 這 然後 心中難過
maxa-Kla lia.
MAXA-think Asp
想 了
「可惜這條魚！」他心中（難過地）想道。
"What a pity! This was such a big fish!” he regretted in his mind.

19.kita-kita?-Kn kuah. pi-itul kuah, pi-zaux kuah.
Red-see-PF none go-up none go-down none
看 沒 往上游 沒 往下游 沒
一直看都沒有，往上游沒有，向下游也沒有。
He kept watching, but there was none. Neither upstream, nor downstream.

20.dua mata asay lia.
go from where Asp
去 經過 何處 了
不知道哪裡去了。
Where has it gone?

21.alaw isia lia ka, mi-dKKKdKK lia.
fish that Asp Top AF-sink Asp
魚 那 了 沉 了
那條魚大概沉下去了。
That fish must have sunk to the bottom.

22.haw lia xutaxa?-Kn kuah lia.
alright Asp wait-PF none Asp
好 了 等 沒 了
罷了！等不到了。
Alright, it's useless to wait any more.
23. isia laiki m<a>ta-bilih-ay lia. maatabilihay di xuma.

那時回去他要回去了，回家去。

So, he was going home.
24. maaka-kita?-ay ina aba.
Rec-see-Fut mother father
相見 母 父
要見他的父母。
He was going to see his parents.

25. “haw mu-puzah lai siw say?”
fine AF-come Asp you Q
好 回來 你
他們問，「你回來了？」
“So have you come home?” they asked.

child man that fine AF-come Asp I
年輕 男 那 好 回來 了 我
年輕人說，「是，我回來了。」
The young man said, “Yes, I've come home.”

27. “saasay lia, haw ha i. pana?-Kn naki lia alaw a isia i aidi
what Asp shot-PF by me Asp fish that at
什麼 了 射 我的 了 魚 那 在
ma-Nayah a rumaw puupuh a dualia i. iruma?-Kn nia, kita?-Kn, ini
AF-green Lig lake origin Lig there search-PF Asp look-PF not
綠 潭 源頭 那邊 找 看 沒
kita?-Kn. idKkKdKk lia. isia lia kuah lia. naki a maxa-kK-kKla
seen-PF sink Asp that Asp none Asp my Lig MAXA-Red-think
見 沉 了 那 沒 我的 想
sasai?-Kn nia ma-luhuni a lia imini a lailaki yaku.” isia laiki.
what-PF Asp AF-this way Asp this Lig I he so
怎麼辦 這樣.如此 這 我 他 如此
「不知何故,我在那邊碧潭中(溪的源頭)射到了魚，找到了，看到了，又看不見
了，沉下去了，牠就沒了。我想如何是好?如此這般我這樣。」他如此說。
“What should I do? I shot the fish in the green lake, which is the source of the stream. I found it and
saw it. It then disappeared. It sank and was gone. What shall I do? I'll do in this way,” he thought.
Pazih Texts and Songs

28. hao lia kai-hinis lia ki rubaN mamalKKn a isia hinis a?i.
    fine Asp stay-mind Asp Nom young man Lig that heart
    好 想 年轻 男 那 心
    那少年心中在想。
    The young man kept thinking in his mind.

29. kaxu adaN a ahuN, duu-dusa ahuN. duudusa dali a isia laiki.
    till one Lig night two night two day Lig that so
    到 一 夜 二 夜 第二 天 那 如此
    "mausay liaku. mausay haku."
    will go already-I will go I
    要去 要去 我
    一夜、二夜，過了兩天。「我要去了。我要去」
    One night, two nights, and two days passed. "I shall go. I shall go."

30. maa-kuas ina aba, "mausay mu-ririx daxK inah. mausay
    Rec-tell Mom Dad will go AF-search land again will go
    告訴 母 父 要去 巡地方 再 要去
    pi-zaux raxuN."
    go-down stream
    下去 河
    他告訴他父母，「我要再去查看地方。我要往河下面去。」
    He said to his parents, "I'm going to look for a land again. I'm going down to the stream."

31. hakK-hakKzKN pasubil rahal ka, "p<ii>na-luxut, p<ii>na-?alaw, ini pitul
    Red-old leave word Top catch-Prf-deer catch-Prf-fish not go up
    老人 留下 話 捕鹿 捕魚 沒 上
    ha, ini ma-xatukul ha, pi-zaux dadua ha," laiki namisiw a maa-kuas.
    not AF-climb go-down all thus their Lig Rec-say
    沒 爬上去 下去 全體 如此 他們的 講
    （這些是）祖先留下來的話，「(他去)捕鹿、捕魚，沒有上坡，沒有爬高，都只是下坡。」他們如此講。
    The ancestors have left us with these words, "A deer which was hit and wounded, or a fish which was hit and wounded, never goes up, nor climbs, but it goes down all the way," thus they said.

32. "haw ha i. ta-ririx-aw mata rahut."
    fine we-check-Fut from downstream
好	咱找	從	下游
「好吧！咱們到下游去查看吧！」
"Alright. Let's go and search for (the fish) downstream."

33. isia laiki m-a-usa?-ay lia.
he thus AF-Prg-go-Fut Asp
他 如此 要去 了
他那樣就要去了。
Then he went.
Pazih Texts and Songs

34. p<i>ikadul</i>-ay m-a-asu?-ay suazi u wazu ta isia lia i.
Prg-set out-Fut AF-Prg-bring-Fut young Lig dog our that Asp
出發 帶 小 狗 咱 那
He was to set out and bring along his pet dog with him.

35. m-a-usa?-ay lia. pi-zaux lia. duilader² lia isia laisia.
AF-Prg-go-Fut Asp go-down Asp go-really Asp he
要去 了 下去 了 真的去 他
He was leaving and going down the stream. He really did.

36. nahada ni saw a kapadal.
have people piled stones
有人 堆、疊石頭
There were stones piled by people.

37. "asay pai mini lia" isia laiki.
what Q this Asp he thus
什麼 這 他 如此
「這是什麼？」他說。
"What is this?" he said.

38. p<i>iaux-ay</i> kii-kita?-ay.
Prg-go down-Fut Red-see-Fut
下去 看
他要去看看。
He was going down to look at it.

39. ara, masia pa-karax-an ka nahada nu saw a xuma rikibul lia.
Excl that Caus-broad-LF Top have by person Lig house granary Asp
那 溪口 有人 家 小穀倉

² The form duilader is derived from duila 'to go' + eder 'really'.

166
nahada tarantaw ila.

have ditch Asp

有 水溝

那溪流下游的地方有人的家、小穀倉。也有水溝。

Oh! There was a granary hut of some family in the broad space down the stream. There was a ditch (around it).

40. haw laik alaw isia a pi-zau-zaux lia ka asikis-an lia. uka nu fine thus fish that Lig go-Red-down Asp Conj painful-LF Asp other by

好 如此 魚 那 下去 痛 其他

saw a sKn nia. ma-rizaw(at) mu-laNyuy mu-zakay lia.

people Lig said Asp Sta-dizzy AF-swim AF-walk Asp

人 據說 游 走 了

呀！那條魚一直流下來了。牠痛，如人們所說的，歪歪斜斜地遊走。

When the fish went down, it was painful, as people said. It was swimming away unsteadily.

41. haw lia padadKr di namisiw a suNut namisiw a x<in>utu a fine Asp get hooked at their Lig bridge their Lig Prf-pile Lig

好 鉤住 他們的 橋 他們的 堆

batu lai ki alaw a isia.

stone Asp Nom fish Lig that

石頭 魚 那

那條魚剛好被橋下石墩（石頭堆）阻擋住了。

The fish was hooked by the piled stones under the bridge.

42. maa-baza hayaku.

AF-know I

知道 我

我怎麼知道？

How would I know? (I did not expect it.)

43. kaw ki rubaN mamais isia lia.

then Nom young lady there Asp

年輕 女 那 了

那時後那裡有位年輕女子。

Then, a young lady was there.

44. m<a>a-ka-kawas-ay lia.
交談了
She was going to talk.

互望了
They looked at each other.

相談了
They talked to each other and got acquainted with each other.

知道咱勾住何處沒不知我如此好了
「我怎麼知道魚在哪勾住了呢？不，我不確定（是否這女孩拿走了那條魚）。」（男子如此自問）
“How would I know where the fish was hooked? No, I'm not sure (if this girl took it),” thus he asked himself.

他找到那邊，但沒找到。
He checked up to there, but there was no (fish). ³

It seems that the informant started telling another plot from 48 on. Thus, the sentences 36 through 47 should be deleted. However, because they are still valid as sentence examples, they are left here as they appear in the original text.

³
日正當中，天氣很熱。

(The sun) was up above, and it was hot.

那時如此我的要往上爬樹幹樹那邊誰的家

50. isia laiki, “naki a m<x>a-xatukul-ay di puNu kahuy. dua nima xuma then thus my Lig AF-Prg-climb-Fut at trunk tree there whose house
He said, "I shall climb the tree. Whose house is that? There is a granary hut, a rice field and a ditch."
The dog wagged its tail, whining, and the girl got there to rest.
Pazih Texts and Songs

56. “nima wazu?” laila a isia laiki wazu a suazi a wazu a whose dog in that way Lig that in this way dog Lig little dog Lig

ma-riwiriw lia.
AF-wag tail Asp

搖尾巴了

她問，「誰的狗？」那隻狗在搖尾巴。

“Whose dog?” she said, and the pet dog was wagging its tail.

57. haw i lia. kialih kialih ma-riwiriw lia.
fine Asp near near AF-wag tail Asp

好了近近搖尾巴了

好了，狗搖著尾巴一直接近。

Fine, (the dog) was getting closer and closer while wagging its tail.

58. duasaasay ki rubang mamais talawas laila.
what to do Nom young lady raise head in that way

做什麼年輕女抬頭那樣

女子不知要做什麼。她抬頭了。

The girl didn't know what to do, and raised her head.

59. “kii-kita yaku. yaku ka ta-kita?-aw naimu lahaiki yaku.”
Red-look I I Conj we-see-Fut you I

正在看我看我也要看你們我

(男人想道)「她正在看我。我也要看你們。」

“(She's) looking at me. I'm also going to look at you,” (the young man thought).

60. “haw haw, alu riaux. ima pai siw? p<->uzah di asay?” laiki alright come go down who you Prg-come where in this way

好好來下來誰Q你來何處如此

rubang mamais imisiw.
young lady that

年輕女那個

「好，好，下來！你是誰？從哪裡來的？」那個女子問道

“Alright, come down. Who are you? Where do you come from?” the girl asked.

61. isia lia m<->a-riaux lia.
then Asp AF-Prg-come down Asp
然後了下來了
然後他就下來了
Then he was coming down.

62. maa-ba-baxa'-ay rahan rubaN mamalKN isia i.
Rec-Red-give-Fut word young man that
應答話年輕男那
少年人要應答。
The young man was to respond.

63. “haw ha i. saasay pai siw laila?”
  alright what you in that way
好什麼Q你那樣
「你要做什麼？」(女孩問)
“Alright, what are you up to?” (the girl asked).

64. “haw lia maluhuda maluhuda hayaku siidua mu-ririx daxK mata
puupuh
fine Asp thus thus I go AF-check land toward origin
好因此因此我去了巡察地向源頭
raxuN.
river
溪
「我去探看過溪的源頭。
“Alright, I went checking traps and searching for the source of the river in this way and in that way.”

65. kii-kita?'-ay ma-Nayah a runaw. kii-kita?'-ay ma-taru a alaw.
Red-see-Fut AF-blue lake Red-see-Fut Sta-big Lig fish
看到碧潭。看到大魚。
I saw a blue lake, in which I saw a big fish.

66. isia laiki naki a paa-kizih-ay buzux u rawin.
then in this way my Lig Caus-low-fut bow and arrow
那時如此我的解下，放下弓和箭
那時我解下弓箭。
Then I released my bow and arrows.
I drew my bow and shot at it. I hit the target.
68. mi-dKkKdKk mi-xabaxap. haw ha i iruma?-Kn nia.
   AF-sink    AF-float   alright  found-PF   Asp
   沉        浮        找到
   沉下去又浮起来，找到了。
   It sank and floated. I found it.

69. m<a>a-baza mi-dKkKdKk lia ka ini kita?-Kn lia.
   AF-Prg-know AF-sink  Asp Conj not  see-PF  Asp
   不知    沉    了    没    看    了
   我不知道牠會沉下去，再也看不到牠了。
   I did not know it sank, and couldn't find it.

70. kaxu uhuni duu-dusa a dali.
    till    now    Red-two    day
    到      现在    第二      天
    到今天过了二天了。
    As of today, it's been two days.

71 imini, isia laiki naki a minah a ta-usay taxu-bilih.
   this then  in this way  my  again  Lig  let's-go  TAXU-return
   這      那時      如此      我的      再      要去      回去
   我要再回去(看看)。
   In this way, I'll go and return again.

72. nu hakK-hakKzKN maa-kuas ka, 'luxut piina, alaw piina,
   Red-ancestor  Rec-tell  Conj  deer  hit and wounded  fish  hit and wounded
   長輩      講      鹿      魚
   ini pitul ha pi-zaux ha' ka, ini ma-luhuni.
   not go up  go-down  not  AF-do  in  this  way
   沒     上去(游)     下來     沒     如此     這樣
   根據長輩所說，「如果鹿或魚被打中且受傷了，(牠們)絕不會往上逃，而是往下
   游去。」是不是就像這樣呢？
   According to our ancestors' saying, 'if a deer is hit and wounded, or a fish is hit and wounded, it
   never goes up, but it goes down,' isn't it like this?

73 haw ha i halKkat laiki yaku. ta-silamKd-ay p<a>i-zaux-ay raxuN.
   right  just recall  in this way  I    let's-learn-Fut    Prg-go down-Fut    river
好　　憶起　　如此　　我　　下去　　溪
啊！我想起來了。咱們嘗試下去溪中試試看吧！
Right, it just occurred to me that I should learn to go and see downstream. Then I went downstream.
74. kii-kita?-ay nimu a xuma kabad-an a pii a tarantaw.  
Red-look-Fut your Lig home paved with boards Lig Lig ditch  
看你們的家鋪木板[土卑]水溝  
我看到你家和鋪有木板的水溝。  
I saw your house and a ditch paved with boards.

75. pakadini mi-kita nimu a xuma lia. isia laiki.  
from-here AF-see your Lig home Asp then in this way  
從這裡看你們的家了那時如此  
(我)到這裡就看到了你們的家了，就這樣。  
When I came up to here, I saw your house. It was like this.

76. haayuu duila mata asay? haw ha i.  
oh go from where  
哎呀去從何處  
哎呀!(魚)到哪裡去了?  
Oh! Where has (the fish) gone?

77. ta-sKkKd-i na laha yaku m<a>a-baza. mata di dini."  
let's-rest-Imp uncertain I AF-Prf-know from here  
咱休息不確定我不知從此地  
我想該休息了吧!我不知不覺就來到這了。」  
Let's take a rest, I thought. I came up to here without knowing it." (thus the young man said).

78. “huu, ma-luhusu haiisiw aai lia."  
oh Sta-in that way you Asp  
如此你  
「你原來如此。」(女子說)  
“Oh! You were like this, I see.” (She said).

79. maa-ba-baxa rahan lia.  
Rec-Red-give word Asp  
交談了  
他們交談了。  
They talked to each other.

80. “haw lia. tia, tia ta-pahas-i, tia niam a xuma disiw i m-ituku."  
fine Asp go go let's-have fun-Imp go our Lig home there AF-sit  

Pazih Texts and Songs

「好了，咱們去玩吧！到我家那去坐坐。」

"Alright now. Let's go to our house and sit there and have fun!" (she said).
81. mausay, p<a>-sak Kl-ay namisiw a xuma. 
去 PAr-run Arrive-Fut their Lig home 
他們快到她家了。 
They were going and arriving at their house.

82. "palal KN dini na siw i. tausay 4 maa-kuas niam a ina aba," 
stay here you shall go Rec-tell our Lig mother father 
留這裡你要去告訴我們的母父 
laiki u rubaN mamais isia. 
如此年輕女那個 
in this way young lady that 
「你就待在這裡。 (我)要告訴我的父母去，」那女子如此說。 
“You stay here! I'll go and talk to my parents," the young girl said.

83. "alu si, saasay pai sia? p<a>-uzah asay? ima?" 
come please what Q he Prc-come where who 
來什麼他來何處誰 
「叫他來！他在做什麼？從哪裡來？他是誰？」(她父母說) 
"Please tell him to come. What is he doing? Where did he come from? Who is he?" (asked her parents)

84. "m<a>-a-baza yaku," laiki rubaN mamais a isia i. 
AF-Prf-know I thus young lady Lig that 
不怎麼知道我如此年輕女那個 
「我不清楚。」那年輕女孩如此說。 
"I don't know," thus the young girl said.

85. asu?-un nia mata namisiw a xuma lia. 
carry-PF Asp to their home Asp 
帶了向他們家了 
He was taken to their house.

4 The form tausay < ta-usa>-ay 'we-go-Fut', e.g., tausa? ay lia-ku 'I'm going'.
Pazih Texts and Songs

86. “haa, haa, haa, sikarum, sikanum. ima pai siw?” isia laiki.

Oh oh oh enter enter who Q you thus

「進來，進來。你是誰？」(她父母)如此對他說

“Oh, come in, come in. Who are you?” they said.

87. m<a>aka-kawas-ay, “yaku ka damuri rarKsKtsKn yaku i,” isia lia,

AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut I Conj personal name said I thus Asp

講 我 人 名 據說 我 那樣

haw lia.

好

「我的名字叫作 Damuri RarKsKt。」

He was to say, "I am called Damuri RarKsKt," he said like that.

88. maa-kawas lia, maa-baxa rahan nia.

Rec-tell Asp Rec-give words Asp

講話了 交談了 話了

他們就交談了。

They talked to each other.

89. maa-paha-pahatan.

Rec-Red-laugh

笑

他們笑了。

They laughed.

90. “p<a>uzah di asay pai siw?”

Prg-come at where Q you

來 何處 你

「你從哪裡來的？」

Where did you come from?

91. “yaku ka p<a>uzah di miadua raxuN a binayu a dua yaku i.

I Conj Prg-come at over there river Lig mountain Lig yonder I

我 來 那邊,對岸 溪 山 我

ini maanu waadKN.” isia laiki.
not far  no concession  thus
不 远 不讓步 如此

「我從溪對岸那邊的山上來的，並不太遠。」他如此說。
"I came from the opposite side of the river and the mountain over there, not far away." he said.

92. "haw lia. palalKN dida."
good Asp live there
好 了 住 那兒
「好了，你就住在那兒。」
"Good, you live there!" (her parents said.)

93. m<a>aka-kawas-ay lia.
AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut Asp
互相講話 了
他們交談了。
They talked to each other.

94. saasay, saasay la maa-baxa rahal lia.
what what Asp Rec-give words Asp
什麼 什麼 交談 話
他們討論要做什麼。
They talked over what to do.

95. isia laiki, haw ha i. maa-paha-pahatan.
they thus good Rec-Red-laugh
他們 如此 好 大家笑
好，好，大家笑。
They were happy like this.

96. aa iruma?-Kn a marinu lia, hakK-hakKzKN maa-kuas, iruma?-Kn a
find-PF Lig weak point Asp old men Rec-say find-PF Lig
找到 弱點 了 長輩 說 找到
marinu lia. haw ha i.
weak point Asp good
弱點 好
我們的長輩所說，他終於找到弱點（這女孩）了，這樣很好。
He found (the girl) finally after all, as our ancestors said. It was good.
97. "nita m-ula mK-dKkKI ki alaw a imini. ma-taru a alaw. padadKr
we AF-first AF-pick up fish Lig this Sta-big Lig fish hook
咱 先 揀 魚 還 大 魚 勾住
dida ki rawil a imini." isia laiki.
there Nom arrow Lig this he thus
那兒 箭 還 他 如此
「我先揀到這條大魚了。這支箭在那兒勾住大魚了。」他這樣講。
"I first picked up this fish. A big fish. It has been hooked with this arrow," he said like this.
100. “haw ha. ituku, ikuku.” maa-baxa rahan nia. maa-paha-pahatan.
  good sit sit Rec-give words Rec-Red-laugh
  好 坐 坐 交談 話 Asp 大家笑
  「好！請坐，請坐！」他們高興地交談著。
  “Good! Sit down, sit down!” They talked to each other and were laughing.

101. kawk i rin i, a-ma-sikuari a isia i, maa-puhinis a isia a i, maa-puhinis a
  but child male Lig that Sta-Red-shy Lig look like-PF Lig
  但 子 男 那 不好意思 看起來
  gagam. the like
  樣子
  但那青年看起來不太好意思的樣子。
  But that young man seemed to be shy.

102. haw mini a ma-sikuari isia ma-sikuari isia lia a, maa-puhinis a
  good this Lig AF-fall in love she AF-fall in love he Asp Rec-fall in love Lig
  好 這樣 中意 她 中意 他 中意
  gagam lia. the like Asp
  樣子
  這樣，她愛他，他愛她，他們彼此中意。
  In this way, she loved him, he loved her, and they seemed to have fallen in love with each other.
102. *isia laiki, “alaw ma-taru padadKr a buzux,” ka laiki namisiw a*

他們如此 魚 大 勾住 箭 如此他們

maa-kuas.
Rec-talk

講

「大魚被箭勾住了，」他們這樣說。

“There was a big fish hooked by an arrow,” thus they talked to each other.

103. *kawki rubaN mamalKN a isia ka, “haw ka ta-kita?-aw naiki but young man Lig that Conj good Conj we-look-Fut my*

但 年輕 男 那 好 咱們看 我的

rawin niani,” isia laiki.
bow that he thus

弓 那 他 如此

但那青年說，「好，咱們看那把弓吧！」

*But that young man said, “Alright, let’s take a look at my bow!”*

104. *“usa, ara?-i aidi punia a mulasi lKzKk-Kn di mulasi a dida i.”*

去 拿 在 穀倉 穀 穩 插 穀 那裡

isia laiki, m-ukusa m-ara lia. pa-kita sKn lia.
they thus AF-go AF-take Asp Caus-see is said Asp

他們如此去 拿 了 使看 據說了

「去拿那把插在穀倉那邊的弓箭。」他們這樣說，她就去拿來給他看了。

“Go and take what is planted into the rice in granary there.” She went to take it, and showed it to him.

105. *“a’a, maa?-aisii?ay lia kaxa. maa?-aisii?ay axad- a isia i, oh Rec-same Asp iron Rec-same shaft Lig that*

相同 鐵(箭頭) 相同 箭身 那

maa?-aisii?ay halupas, aawi lia.”

same long Asp

相同 長

「哎呀！(和我的)相同：鐵頭相同、箭身相同，长度也相同。」
“Oh! It is the same! The arrowhead is the same, the arrowshaft is the same, the length is exactly the same!”
106. kaa-kan-ay daalian nia.
   Red-eat-Fut lunch Asp
   要吃午餐 Asp
   要吃午餐了。
   They were eating lunch.

107. isia laiki, m<a>aka-kawas ay lia.
   then thus AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut Asp
   那時如此談
   那時他們要（更進一步）交談了。
   Then they were talking to each other.

108. “imu ka, haima rubaN mamalKN suazi maamah? m-ara
   you Conj how many young man younger sibling elder brother AF-take
   你們多少年輕男人弟妹兄娶
   tauxumak lia?”
   Agt-house Asp
   家後(妻) Asp
   「你們有多少兄弟姊妹？婚配了沒有？」
   “How many brothers and sisters do you have? Are you married yet?”

   not yet he Asp AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut Asp
   還沒有他談
   「還沒有，」他答道。他們交談了。
   "Not yet," he said. They talked to each other.

110. “yaku ka, ma-purut, maxa-luak, kuah a saysay,” rubaN mamalKN
    i Conj Sta-stupid MAXA-poor none Lig anything young man
    我不能幹變窮沒什麼年輕男
    a maa-kuas.
    Lig Rec-say
    講
    「我很笨拙、貧窮又一無所有。」男青年說。
    "I am clumsy, poor, and have nothing." the young man said.
111. kaw isia ki ina aba rubaN mamais, “kita?-i na isiw,” ki
till then Nom mother father young lady look-Imp you Nom
到那時主母父年輕女看你
rubaN mamais. “riak say? pauhinis-Kn sai?”
young lady good Q love-PF Q
年輕女好嗎中意嗎
然後那姑娘的父母對女兒說，「你看他，好嗎？中意嗎？」
Then, the parents of the young lady said to her, “You, look at him. Is it alright? Do you love him?”

112. isia laiki, “m<a>a-baza. imu ki ina aba ha. haw laiki imu ka
she thus AF-Prf-know you Nom mother father good thus you Conj
她如此不知你們母父好如此你們
haw i, yaaku ka saila la,” ki rubaN mamais a isia maa-kuas i.
good I Conj no opinion Asp Nom young lady Lig that Rec-talk
好我沒意見年輕女那講
那姑娘說，「我不知道。爸媽說好就好。我沒意見。」
“I don't know. If you, mother and father, think it alright, I have nothing to say,” thus said the young girl.

113. kaw isia ki rubaN mamalKN a isia ka, “aa riak u ka,
maxa-luak
till then Nom young man Lig that Conj ah good Conj MAXA-poor
到那時年輕男那好變窮
ma-purat. yaaku yaaku talima. kuah a saisai.”
Sta-stupid I I alone none Lig anything
不能幹我我自己沒什麼
然後那男孩說，「即使我很窮、不能幹，除了自己什麼都沒有，也沒關係嗎？」
Then the young man said, "Is it alright even if I'm poor, clumsy, have nothing but myself?"

114. kaw isia lia. “haw ka ma-luhusu ka imu ka usa ka,
till then Asp good Conj Sta-like that Conj you Conj go Conj
到那時好那樣你們去
pa-paxa-mamais-mamalKN. riak say? ma-hata-hatan sai?”
Caus-PAXA-man-woman good Q AF-Red-laugh Q
使結為夫婦好嗎高興嗎
到那時，「你們既然如此，就結為夫婦吧！好嗎？高興嗎？」
And then, “Alright. If you are like that, go! We’ll make you get married. Is it good? Are you happy?”
115. “ayo, ini mi-kita yaaku a ma-purut maxa-luak ka, haw laiki imu oh not AF-see i Lig Sta-stupid MAXA-poor Conj fine like this you 沒 看 我 不能幹 變窮 好 如此 你們 ka, haw ka m<a>a-baza niam a hakK-hakKzKN,” laiki rubaN Conj fine Conj AF-Prf-know our Lig old men thus young 好 不知 我們 老人 如此 年輕 mamalKN a isia pabarKt. man Lig that answer 男 那 回答 「啊唷，你們不嫌棄我不能幹又窮。即使你們說好，可是不知我父母怎麼樣。」 男青年回答。 “Ayo! You don't see I'm clumsy and poor. Even if you are alright, in this way, I'm not sure about my parents,” answered the young man.

116. “haa, haw. nimu a lama, nimu a maaka-hapKt.” good your Lig fate your Lig Rec-love 好 你們的 命運 你們 相愛 「唉唷，好吧，這是你們的命運，你們相愛。」 “Alright, this is your fate. You love each other.”

117. rubaN mamalKN a isia, haapKt isia, haw hinis-Kn. young man Lig that love her good mind-PF 年輕 男 那 愛 她 好 心 那青年愛她，且他是快樂的。 That young man loved her, and he was happy.

118. rubaN mamais a isia, haapKt isia, haw hinis-Kn. young lady Lig that love him good mind-PF 年輕 女 那 愛 他 好 心 那少女也有意於他，她是快樂的。 That young girl loved him, and she was happy.

119. isia lia, “haw ka ma-luhusu ka, kaxa-mamais-mamalKN laimu uhuni.” that Asp fine Conj Sta-like this Conj KAXA-man-woman you now 那樣 好 這樣 結為夫妻 你們 現在 既然如此，( 女孩父母說，)「你們現在就結為夫妻吧！」 Thus, (her parents said,) “If it is good in this way, you get married today!”
Pazih Texts and Songs

120. “maa-baxa aku a rahan ina, maa-baxa rahan a aba,” isia laiki.

Rec-give I Lig words mother Rec-give words Lig father he thus

「要告訴我的父母，」他(男的)這樣說。

"I'll tell Mother, I'll tell Father," he said like this.

121. maa. uka ni saw a sKn nia, “pa-pa-rKzKz-Kn nia, isia laiki.”

other of people Lig said Asp Caus-PA-together-PF Asp thus

有些人說，「讓他們結婚。」

Some people said, "Let them get married."

122. kaw ahuani sia, dusa isia, tuuturu ahuani sia laiki m<a>aka-kawas-ay

then night that two that three night that thus AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut

晚上 那 二 那 三 晚 那 如此 告訴彼此

lia.

Asp

然後第一晚，第二晚，第三晚，他們討論了。

The first night, the second night, the third night, they talked with each other.

123. m<a>aka-kawas-ay laiki rubaN mamalKN a isia i, “aa ta-usa?-ay na

AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut thus young man Lig that erh we-go-Fut

要講 年輕 男 那 咱去

ha. mausay kaisay lia laiki naki a ina aba. “ta-usa?-ay na

will go how Asp thus my Lig mother father we-go-Fut

要去 怎麼樣 如此 我的 母 父 咱去

iu nahani?-ay."

again come here-Fut

再 來

男青年對他們說，「我得要走了，我要去告訴我父母，看他們的意見如何。我會

再回來的。」

The young man talked to them, "I'm leaving. I'll go to see how my parents are. I'll come here
again."
124. kawki ina aba a yaasia ka, “mausay ka, haw.
	m<a>a-lalKN-ay
	then mother father Lig they Conj will go Conj fine AF-Prg-stay-Fut
	母 父 他們 要去 好 住
hanisay a xinian, aasi [= ka] m<a>a-tawarKn-ay lia. hii, ini
	how many Lig night perhaps AF-Prg-return-Fut Asp not
	多少 夜 也許 回來 不
atu ma-lalKN adaN ahuan, dusa ahuan. haka riak.”
	AF-live one night two night really good
住 一 夜 二 夜 真 好
她的父母說，「若你要走，沒關係。要住幾天呢？也許很快。不必住一晚或二晚
才好。」
*Her parents said, “If you are leaving, alright. How many nights are you going to stay there?
Perhaps you’ll go and come. You can’t come back soon. You’ll have to stay a couple of nights, but
it’s alright.”*

125. maa-ka-kawas taxu-bilih.
	Rec-Red-talk TAXU-return
商量 回去
商量要回去。
*They talked over about returning.*

126. kawki ina aba isia ka, “ay, kaw ma-luhusu ka taK-?KdKr.
	then mother father that Conj oh then Sta-like that Conj TAK-true
然後 母 父 那個 這樣 說真的
usa, imu ka usa. paa-rKzKrKt.”
	go you Conj go Caus-together
去 你們 去 一起
然後她父母說，「既然如此，好吧，你們一起去。」
*Her parents said, “If it’s really like that, alright. Go! You (two) go together!”*

127. haaka ini ma-sadial a maxa-kK-kKla.
	really not Sta-bad Lig MAXA-Re d-think
真的 沒 壞 想
( 若他們一起去 ) 他們就不用擔憂。
*(If they went together,) they didn’t have to worry.*
They talked over with each other about getting married.
Text 4. 看風水 Practicing Geomancy

Narrated by Pan Wan-ji (male, 87)
Recorded by Shigeru Tsuchida in 1969
Interpreted by Pan Jin-yu and translated by Paul Li in 1997.

潘萬吉（男, 87 岁）口述
土田滋記錄，埔里愛蘭，1969 年 11 月
潘金玉解說，李壬癸翻譯，1997 年

1. ta-du’duʔ-aw minah rahan u maa-xairay.
   *let’s-talk-Fut again words* Rec-joke
   咱講再話談笑
   咱們再說笑談吧。
   *Let’s talk about a fun story again.*

2. iki maxa-riak a saw la. m<=>a-hadas di disiw i di laNu lia.
   Nom MAXA-rich Lig man AF-Prg-Red-have fun at there at yard Asp
   有一個富人，他在庭院裡遊玩。
   *A rich man was having fun there in the front yard.*

3. lahadKN daran tasiaw lia i.
   gate road perhaps Asp
   可能門外就是馬路。
   *Perhaps the road was outside the gate.*

4. laiki kii-kitaʔ-ay na saw a sKn a takarat kii-kita daxK
   thus Red-see-Fut person Lig was said Lig geomancer Red-look ground
   据說風水師看地
   据說有位看風水的先生正好在附近觀看。
   *It was said a geomancer was looking around.*

5. “p<=>a>uzah di asay ki takarad- a isiw? saasay pai siw?”
Where are you from, geomancer? What are you doing?

「你風水先生從哪裡來的？你在做什麼？」
6. kawki takarad- a isia ka, “yaaku ka kii-kita daxK, kii-kita then geomancer Lig that Conj I Conj Red-look ground Red-look 風水師 那 我 看 地理 看 maatu-xuma, ra-rubaN-Kn saw a daxK, ka m<a>ha-hadas.” build-house Red-burry-PF person Lig ground Conj AF-Prg-Red-have fun 蓋房子 埋 人 地理 遊玩 風水先生說，「我在看地理、看蓋房子和埋葬地。我（到此地）遊玩。」 Then that geomancer said, "I am a practicing geomancy, discerning the geography where to build a house or where to bury a (dead) person, and I'm just playing around."

7. “aay,” kaw ki maxa-riak a saw isia ka. yes then Nom MAXA-rich Lig person that Conj 富 人 那 那個富人說，「喔！」。 "Oh, I see," said the rich man.

8. isia ka së oŋ sKn, oN gii sKn isia lia. that Conj family name Ong said Ong Gi said that Asp 那 (姓 王) 據說 王義 據說 那 那個富人姓王，名義。 He was Ong by family name, and was called Ong Gi.

9. maxa-riak a saw u, uka nu saw a sKn. MAXA-rich Lig person other people Lig is said 富有 人 其他 人 所說 如人們所說，他很富有。 Other people said that he was a rich man.

10. kaw isia ki së oŋ a oN gii a isia laiki maxa-kK-kKla?-ay. till then Nom family name Ong Lig Ong Gi Lig that thus MAXA-Red-think-Fut 到 那時 姓 王 王義 那 如此 想 王義在考慮。 Then that Ong Gi was thinking like this.

11. “p<a>uzah di asay a takarat pai siw?” laila i. Prg-come at where Lig geomancer you thus 來 何處 風水師 Q 你 那樣
「你風水先生從哪裡來的？」他那樣問。
"Where are you from, geomancer?" he asked.
12. isia laiki, “yaaku ka p<a>uzah di miaadua awas a saw hayaku.”

He said, “I am a man from overseas.”

13. yamisiw ki x<in>api tasiaw lia.

Maybe they had braided hair.

14. isia laiki, kaw isia laiki uN gii isia lia. maxa-riak a saw u,

That Ung Gi was a rich man, who loved his descendants, and wanted them to become great officers.

15. asu?-un di naamisiw karum a xuma maaka-kawas-ay lia.

He took the geomancer to their home to talk to each other.

16. isia laiki, “haw lia.”

He said, “Good!”
Pazih Texts and Songs

17. kaw isia i lia, ma-lalKN adaN a xinian dida lia a, ma-lalKN laisia.  

till then Asp AF-live one Lig night there Asp AF-stay there  

到那時住一夜那裡住那  

到那時，他留（風水先生）在他那裡住一晩。  

Then he stayed (the geomancer) overnight there.

18. kaw duu-dusa dali pKdKSax a isia lia. mausay lia.  

till second day light Lig that Asp will go Asp  

到第二日天亮了要去了  

On the second day it became light. He was leaving.


far near Nom your Lig here Red-bury-LF people perhaps Asp  

遠近你們這兒墓地人可能  

「你們這裡的墓地遠還是近？」他那樣問。  

"Is your graveyard far or near?" maybe he asked.

20. isia laiki, “maanu maanu nahada, alih alih nahada.”  

he thus far far exist near near exist  

他如此遠近有近近有  

「遠的有，近的也有。」他如此說。  

He said, "Some are far, while the others are near."

21. “haw ka ma-luhusu ka tia na ta-kita’?-aw,” isia laiki takarad- a  

fine Conj Sta-like this Conj go let's-see-Fut he thus geomancer Lig  

好如此去咱看他如此風水師  

isia i.  

that  

那  

「既然如此，好，走吧！咱們去看吧！」那風水先生說。  

"If that's the case, good! Let's go and see!" the geomancer said like this.

22. kaw maxa-riak a saw isia i, haimisiw a paray, haimisiw a daxK,  

then MAXA-rich Lig person that that much Lig money that much land  

富有那人那麼多地  

haapKd- u rakahna maxa-taumala’-Kn, haapKd- ali a  

love child Lig become-officer-PF love grandchild Lig
大概那個富人有很多錢、很多地，他愛兒子做大官，愛孫子做大官。
Maybe that rich man had much money, many lands, wanted his children to become great officers, his grandchildren to get great titles.
23. mayaw nahada u [sooi to si ane la hō:] (in Taiwanese)¹

still exist all

還沒有所以都是安呢吧?

還有其他的。

(But his offsprings) did not become big officers yet. [That's the case, isn't it?]

24. isia laiki, mausay lia piaalay lia mu-riix u uka u a saw a sKn

he thus will go Asp begin Asp AF-search other person is said

他如此要去開始找別人據說

[uka ni saw a sKn] a ra-rubaN-an a binayu tasiaw lia i.

other by people Lig said Lig Red-bury-LF Lig mountain maybe Asp

別人據說 墓地(埋)山可能

那時他們要去開始找，如人所說的可以埋藏的山。

Perhaps then they were going to begin to look for a good graveyard in the mountain.

25. isia laiki, mi-kita lia la, haw i lia, mu-riix u daxK lia.

that thus Asp fine Asp AF-search land Asp

那個如此好找地

那時他們看(地)，也找到地了。

Then they looked for land and found a piece of land.

26. kii-kita?-ay dua, mata di asay a mi-kita, mata di daya rabaxan, tasiaw
Red-see-Fut there from at where Lig AF-see from at east south maybe

看那邊從何處看從東南可能

lia i.

Asp

要看那邊，從那邊看，據說向東南。

They were looking at the land, from where did they look at? Maybe from south-east.

27. "niima r<in>ubaN pai ni i mu-zizay” isia lia i.

whose Prf-bury Q this Sta-old he Asp

₁ Pazih equivalent for the Taiwanese expression is kinaluhusu?-an. Here after all Taiwanese expressions are indicated by [   ].
誰的 埋 這個 舊 他
「這是誰的舊墓？」
"Whose grave is this old one?" he said.

28.“imini ka, hii, ima nahada. nimu a akuN sai apu sai?
this Conj who exist your Lig grandfather grandmother
這 誰 有 你們 公 Q 祖母 Q
ima a bul adu sKn dini. aubil a dali ka, rakihan ali ka,
who Lig bone put away said here later Lig day Conj child grandchild
誰 骨 放 據說 這兒 後 日子 孫
m<a>a-rukad-ay nahada?-ay maaxa-taumala?-Kn haa,” lailai ki takarad-
AF-Prg-go out-Fut exist-Fut become-officer-PF thus Nom geomancer
出來 有 做官 如此 風水師
a isia m<a>a-kuas i.
Lig that AF-Prg-say
那 講
是你們的祖父或祖母？據說誰的骨頭放在這兒，日後出來的子孫會當大官。」那個
風水先生說。
"This one, who is (buried here)? Your grandfather? Or your grandmother? Whose bones are put
away here? In later days there may be your descendants becoming great officers," said that
g geomancer.

29.kaw isia ki uN gi a isia a m<a>a-kuas i. “siū tio.” [= haw] hai
till then Nom Ong Gi Lig that Lig AF-Prg-say fine
到 那時 主 王 義 那 講 好
maxa-kKla lia, hii.
MAXA-think Asp
想
然後王義要說，「好。」他想。
Then that ON Gi thought, saying, "Good!"

30."kuah a imisu a daxK aa, kau nahada imisiw a daxK, nahada,...." none Lig that Lig land till exist that Lig land exist
沒 那 地 到 有 那 地 有
imisiw a takarad- a mu-baza maa-kuas.
that Lig geomancer Lig AF-know Rec-tell
“There is no that land, then there is that land, and there is…,” said that geomancer.

31. “aay, paray ka nahada. mausay haima?” ma-siup laiki nisia
   Oh money Conj exist will go how much AF-caress this way by him
   錢 有 要去 多少 撫摸 如此 他
maxa-kKla.
MAXA-think
想
「喔！(如果要) 錢，(我) 有。要多少才可以擺平呢？」(有錢人) 撫(鬚)心裡想。
“Oh, (if he requires) money, (I) do have some. How much will it cost?” Thus he thought, caressing his beard.

32 kaw isia ki takarad-a isia m<a>kuas i. isia laiki, “niima pai till then Nom geomancer Lig that AF-Prg-say he thus whose Q到那時 主風水師那講他如此誰的
mini rubaN-Kn saw ki daxK a imini?” here buried-PF person Nom ground Lig here
這兒埋人地這兒
然後風水先生說，「這塊地是誰埋在這裡的？」
Then, that geomancer said, “whose was buried in this ground?”

33. “sasai?-Kn a gagam?” lailaiki, un gi a isia i. what to do-PF Lig looking thus Ong Gi Lig that
如何什麼 樣子如此王義那
「這樣子如何是好？」王義問道。
“How should it be done?” asked ON Gi.

34. kaw ki takarad-a isia ka “kaluhuni?i. nahada paray isiw. niima pai mini, paturu?-i di adaN” ka, “mausay haima paray?” lailaiki.
風水先生如此說，「這樣吧，你有錢，誰的在這裡就叫他遷移到別處，看要多少錢。」
Then the geomancer said, “Do like this. You have got money. Whichever this grave may be, make them move to some other place.” “How much will it cost?” asked the man.

35. takarad-a isia m<a>kuas. “isia laiki, aa, haapKt,” tasiaw, geomancer Lig that AF-Prg-say they thus oh love maybe
先生那講他們如此愛可能
風水先生說，「若你給他們這麼多錢，他們會接受的。」
The geomancer said, “If you give such an amount of money, they will accept it.”
exist money MAXA-poor Lig person Conj mention money
有 錢 變窮 人 講著 錢
haw ha ta-paturu?-aw."
好 咱遷移
「我有錢。窮人一聽到錢就會答應遷移。」
"I have got money. For a poor man, money can make him move the grave!"

37. mausay laiki nisia nu saw a maxa-kKja.
will go thus his of person Lig MAXA-think
要去 如此 他的 人 想
他那樣地想。
That is what he thought.

38. [ikeesi] takarad- a m<a>-a-kuas ki uN gii a isia, "paturu?-i ka
geomancer Lig AF-Prg-say Nom Ong Gi Lig that move-imp Conj
風水師  講  王義 那 遷移
mausay haima paray [paarahudun]” siiki maa-kuas.
will go how much money thus Rec-tell
要去 多少 錢 這樣 講
風水先生對王義這樣說,「遷移的話,不知要花多少錢。」
The geomancer said to Ung Gi, "We don't know how much it will cost to make them move (the grave)."

39. haw lai lia. kaw isia lia. m<a>-aka-kawas-ay lia. “niima pai mini?”
fine Asp till then Asp AF-Prg-Red-talk-Fut Asp whose Q this
好 到 那時 交談 誰的 這個
那就好,到那時,交談了,「這個是誰的?」
Good, They were talking to each other, "Whose grave is this?"

40. isia ki “niam,” laila.
that ours thus
那 我們的 那樣
那人那樣說,「是我們的。」
“That is ours," he said.

41. “[sē sā hūe] pai mu?”
Pazih Texts and Songs

family name what Q you
[姓什麼]
「你們姓什麼？」
“What is your family name?”

42. “sè tan,” laila.
family name Tan thus
姓陳
「姓陳，」那樣回答。
“It's Tan,” he said.

43. oh just right Asp
恰巧剛好
剛好。
It is just right.

44. Takarad a isia ka m<a>a-kuas ka, “imu mu-rubaN dini a geomancer Lig that Conj AF-Prg-say Conj you AF-bury here Lig
風水師那講你們埋此地
daxK ka, aubin a dali m<a>arukad-ay taumala? Kn, naki a ground Conj later Lig day AF-Prg-come out-Fut great officer-PF my Lig
地後日出來大官我的
ma-kuas. yaku ka p<in>auzah di masu-ruhuN a saw. pitKrKd-i.”
AF-tell l Conj Prf-come at Mainland Lig person remember-imp
講話我來外地人記住
那個風水先生說，「你們在此埋葬，將來會生出做大官的（子孫），這是我講的話。我是從外地來的。記住！」
That geomancer told, “If you bury (the dead) in this ground, a great officer will come out (= be born), I would say. I am a man from the mainland. Remember it.”

45. Isia lia ka m-ukusa m<a>a-kuas di yamisiw-an yasia ka namisiw that Asp Conj AF-go AF-Prg-say at they-Loc they Top their
那時去講他們他們的
m<a>a-kuas, “imu hapKt riak, yamin hapKt riak. (sii) kaluhusu’i!”
AF-Prg-say you want good we want good do like this

206
講你們要好我們要好這樣
m>a-kuas.
AF-Prg-say
講
那時（地理先生）去對墳主人的地方說，教他們要那樣講才好，「你們要好，我們也要好。你要那樣講」
He went to them to tell them, "You want a good thing, we also want a good thing. You should talk like this!" he said.
Pazih Texts and Songs

46. haw “yaku ka mausay lia,” liaki takarat.
   fine I Conj will go Asp thus geomancer
   '我要走了。' 地理先生說。
   "I'll go now," thus the geomancer said.

47. taxu isia lia ka, turu a dali lia ka, mi-kiliw balas mausay
   till then Asp Conj three Lig day Asp Conj AF-cry worker will go
   到那時了三天叫工人要去
   After three days, he sent for workers to dig out the buried (corpse).

48. daa-daxan-ay lia ka, puzah adaN a rubaN mamais.
   Red-dig-Fut Asp Conj come one Lig young lady
   剛要挖掘時，來了一個年輕女子。
   When they were about to dig, one young girl came.

49. “saasay pai mu? daa-daxan-ay niam a aba r<in>ubaN dini pai mu?
   do what Q you Red-dig-Fut our Lig father Prf-bury here Q you
   做什麼 Q 你們挖我們父埋此地你們
   yaku ka ma-baza imu hapKt dini riak a daxK aubin a dali ka
   I Conj AF-know you love here good Lig land later Lig day Conj
   我知你們愛此地好地方後日
   m<a>a-rukad-ay niak a rakihan ali. iu yamin ka sasay-Kn
   AF-Prg-go out-Fut good Lig child grandchild and we Conj what to do-PF
   出來好子孫且我們怎麼辦
   lia? imu ka hapKt taumala?-Kn, yamin ka hapKt taumala?-Kn.
   Asp you Conj love officer-PF we Conj love officer-PF
   你們愛做官我們愛做官
What are you doing? Here you are digging up the place where our father was buried. I know you love this nice place. In the future good descendants will be born. What shall we do? You want to become great officers, we also want to become great officers. Don’t dig up ours! (Or else) we’ll go and sue you at the court.”
Pazih Texts and Songs

D. Pazih Texts Recorded by Erin Asai

淺井惠倫在烏牛欄採集 (1936)，發音人大概是潘登貴 (年齡不詳)
李壬癸根據潘金玉修訂 (2000.11.5)

這三則原來由淺井惠倫 (1936) 所記錄的部分巴宰語料，前二則由李壬癸在
2000 年 11 月 5 日，根據潘金玉的口述修訂於愛蘭。第三則「射太陽」於 2001
年 9 月 10 日才由土田滋譯解出來。語料第一行粗體字是淺井的原記錄，第二行
則是李壬癸或土田滋修訂。

The following three Pazih texts were recorded by Erin Asai in 1936, his informant being
probably Pan Teng-kuei, and edited by Paul Li (Texts 1 and 2) and Shigeru Tsuchida (Text 3)
with the assistance of a Pazih native speaker, Pan Jin-yu, in November 2000 and September
2001 respectively. In each sentence the first line in boldface is the original transcription
by Asai, while the second line is the edited version by Li (Texts 1 and 2) or Tsuchida (text 3).

Text 1. 競爭 Competition

1. iminika pijarai madusa daxK aubina dari pirulik a kakawas.
   imini ka pialay maa-dusa daxK, aubin a dali pirurik a ka-kawas.
   this first AF/Rec-divide land later day violate Red-word

   這個故事是說起初人們把土地為兩半，但後來他們卻違背（當初的協定）。
   This is a story that, in the beginning the land was divided into two parts, but later on (the people)
   violated (the original agreement).

2. pijarai makarja, aubirjaka mataNiz.
   pialay ka maaka-riak, aubin lia ka maa-taNis.
   first Rec-good later Rec-hostile

   起初大家相安無事，後來卻不和睦。
   In the beginning they were friendly to each other, but later on they became hostile.

3. zaxu rjaka muttaxai nitta a sau paze.
   zaaxu liaka mu-tahay nita a saw pazih.
   aborigines then AF-kill our people Pazih

   生番 然後 殺 咱 人 巴宰
然後生番殺害咱們巴宰人。
Then the mountain aborigines killed our Pazih people.
4. znira ka imini tia di azaN malarKN

"ini riak ka imini, tia di adaN ma-lalKN," not good this go other place AF-live
不 好 這 去 別處 住

「此處不好，就到別處去住吧！」（他們說）
“This place is no good, go somewhere else to live!” (they said).

5. xao baba ha sau.
haw, baabah a saw.
good many people
好 多 人
好了，很多人了。
Good! (We) got many people then.

6. aobil nahaza. hakKzuNmamais makawas ana matururu. tomaraji

aobil nahada hakKzKN mamais ma-kawas, “ana matu-ruru! tumala?-i later exist old woman AF-say don’t MATU-move listen-lmp
後來 有 老 婦 說 別 遷 移 聽！
naki kakawas—paobabazai. paubabazaji mitalam
naki a ka-kawas—pa-u-ba-baza?-i. pa-u-ba-baza?-i mi-talam,
my Red-word Caus-U-Red-know-lmp Caus-U-Red-know-lmp AF-race
我的 話 學！ 學！ 跑
rakirakahal sau aubiladari. lirjakaita.
raki-rakihan saw. aubil a dali ri-riak a ita.”
Red-young people later day Red-good we
年輕 人 後來 日 好 咱
後來有一個老婦說，「別搬家了！聽我的話！學習賽跑，年輕人！將來對咱們好。」
Later an old woman said, “Don’t move (to another place)! Listen to me! Learn to race, young men! It will be good for us.”

7. xKzKma sau mahara-ai rakirakahian sau paobabaza-ai mitaram.

xKzKm a saw ma-xara?-ay raki-rakihan saw pa-u-ba-baza?-ay mi-talam.
estate people AF-call-fut Red-young people Caus-U-Red-know-fut AF-race
地產 人 叫 年輕 人 要 學 跑
地主叫年輕人要學習賽跑。
The landlady told young men to learn to race.

8. musiNar banais. musiNar kau muzamKz.
   mu-siNar banais, mu-siNar kau¹ mu-zamut.
   AF-chase name AF-chase until AF-catch up
   追趕 人名 追趕 到 追上
   They chased after Banais until they caught up with him.

9. maosa-ai marababarKd.
   m<a>usa?-ay marababarKt.
   AF-Prg-go-Fut revenge?
   要去 復仇？
   They wanted to revenge(?)

10. pijarai isija makarja ka-ini matururu daxK
    pialay isia maaka-riak ka, ini matu-ruru daxK.
    since that Rec-good not MATU-move land
    從此 那 和好 不 遷移 地
    從此大家和睦相處，就不遷移到別處。
    They had been friendly to each other ever since, so that they did not move to any other place.

¹ The form kau is a loan from Taiwanese 到 kau ‘till, until’.
Pazih Texts and Songs

Text 2. 洪水 Flood

1. tadudo manu(h) raraparai rja awas rja.
   ta-dudu maanu mK-rKr ap lia ki awas lia.
   let's-talk ancient AF-overflow Asp sea Asp
   說 遠古 溢出 了 海 了
   讓我講遠古海水溢出的故事。
   Let's talk about the ancient overflow of the sea.

2. isija pKrKt a sau. tuzwaka zinakai turwaka kinawas.
   isia pKrKd a saw, tuzuak a z<in>akay, tzuak a k<in>awas.
   that place people bad Prf-behavior bad Prf-word
   那處人 壞 行為 壞話
   那地方的人言行敗壞。
   The people there were ill-behaved and spoke ill of others.

3. maisa diaki aba kaibabau. maxa paudarai udaru sinaxu.
   ma-isat lia ki aba kai-babaw, maxa pa-udal-ay u dal u sinaw.
   Sta-angry Asp God Sta-above then Caus-rain-Fut rain wash
   生氣了 神 上然後使降下雨洗
   天神震怒，使天降下大雨洗劫大地。
   God was enraged and then caused it to rain hard to wash the earth.

4. isija rja makatKlKnKbai awas. binibini/tKnKlKnKp rja.
   Isia lia maxa tKK-tKnKb-ay awas, bini-bini/tKnKlKnKp lia.
   that then Red-inundate-Fut sea Red-full Asp
   那然後淹水海滿滿了
   然後海水淹起來，滿滿地(溢出陸地)。
   The sea was full, overflowed, and inundated all the lands.

5. kaidua haduwa typoza rarju.
   kai-dua hadua tipuzu a raraw.
   stay-there there top mountain name
   在那邊就在那邊 尖頂 山名
   (快要淹到)那邊 Rariw 山頂上了。
   (It was going to reach) there the top of Rariw Mountain.
6. **banakaisi saboNakaisi. maxa-mausa-ai. tiporu a raru.**

   *ban a kaisi sabuN a kaisi max m-a-usa?-ay tipuzu a rariw.*

   **male name**  **female name**  **AF-Prg-go-Fut**  **top**  **mountain name**

   男名  女名  去  尖頂  山名

   Bana Kaisi 和 SabuN Kaisi 他們就要到山頂上去。

   *Bana Kaisi (man) and Sabung Kaisi (woman) were going to the top of Rariw.*

7. **makamawa-kBrai tipozua raru. babireh raisja tKnKbtKKnKba darom.**

   *maxa pa-sakKl-ay tipuzu a rariw, babilih laisia tKnK-tKnKb-*

   **then**  **AF-arrive-Fut**  **top**  **name**  **look back**  **they**  **Red-inundate**  **water**

   然後  快抵達  尖頂  山名  回頭看  他們  淹  水

   快要到達 Rariw 山頂時,他們回頭一看,水逐漸淹上來。

   *As they were arriving at the top of Rariw, they looked back and saw that the water was coming up.*

8. **maxamaxato kBrai tipozua raru.**

   *maxa ma-xatukul-ay tipuzu a rariw.*

   **then**  **AF-climb-Fut**  **top**  **mountain name**

   然後  一直爬上  尖頂  山名

   於是他們一直向上爬到 Rariw 山頂。

   *Then they were climbing to the top of Rariw.*

9. **maxamaxatokBrai itoko babau.**

   *maxa ma-xatukul-ay di ituk babaw.*

   **then**  **AF-climb-Fut**  **top**  **above**

   然後  要爬上  頂  上

   他們爬到山頂上。

   *Then they climbed to the very top.*

10. **tKnKbtKKnKb darom maxamaxato kBrai Nazus batakan.**

   *tKnK-tKnKp dalum maxa ma-xatukul-ay Nadus patakan.*

   Red-inundate  water  AF-climb-Fut  top  bamboo

   淹  水  要爬上  尖端  竹

   水逐漸淹上來，要升高到竹子的末端了。

   *The water was inundating and reaching the top of bamboos.*

11. **asai ka imini paurihadai rja.**

    *asay ka imini p<a>urihad-ay lia.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

why this Prg-die-Fut Asp
為什麼 這 死 了
為什麼這樣？（我們）快要死了嗎？
Why is it so (bad)? (Are we) going to die?

12. maxara raNadai. sinusana kaduxu makasesehaNai udaru sinixu.
   ma-xara laNad-ay sinusana kaduxu maka-si-sihaN-ay udal sinixu.
   AF-call name-Fut chant incantation MAKA-Red-stop-Fut rain big
   叫 名字 用 咒語 停 雨 大?
   他們念咒語要大雨停。
   They chanted incantations to stop the heavy rain.

13. maxahopai darKn awas.
   maxa hupi-ay ki dalum awas.
   then recede-Fut Nom water sea
   然後 退 水 海
   因此海水退了。
   So the water of the sea was receding.

14. makakakitaan tipuzu a binaju.
   maxa ka-kita?-Kn tipuzu a binayu.
   then Red-look-PF top Lig mountain
   然後 看 尖頂 山
   快要看得見各山頂了。
   Then the tops of mountains showed up.

15. maka kikizihai tipuz a rarju.
   maxa kii-kizih-ay tipuzu a rariw.
   then Red-come down-Fut top mountain name
   然後 在下來 尖頂 山名
   他們就要從高山頂上下來。
   They descended from the top of Rariw Mountain.

16. maxamasakKrai ruburubu a daxK.
   maxa ma-sakKJ-ay ruburubu a daxK.
   then AF-arrive-Fut below land
   然後 到達 下面 地
   他們要到達下面的陸地上。
They were arriving at the land down below.

17. aza maxaruwaru abasaysuazi.
  haza maxa-ruaru abasan suazi.
  exist produce-sad elder sibling younger sibling

他們兄妹(姊弟)很傷心。

They siblings were sad.
18. makakikitaai ajam darupit.  
maxa ki-kita'-ay ayam darupit.  
then Red-see-Fut bird black bulbul  
然後 看 鳥 紅嘴黑鵯  
They saw a black bulbul (bird sp., hypsipetes madagascariensis).

19. asai pai misiw? maxa kayalih-ay mi-kita.  
what Q that then near-Fut AF-see  
「那是什麼？」然後他們靠近去看。  
“What is it there?” Then they went close to look at it.

20. kita kita siaun rja pijaxun maixih.  
kita-kita siaKn lia pijaxun  
Red-look carefully Asp millet bundle  
一直看 好,仔細 了 小米 一束  
仔細地看是一束小米。  
They looked at it carefully, and it was a bundle of millet.

21. raru isija xoma rikiburu.  
raru isia xuma rikibul.  
maybe that home granary  
大概 那個 家 穀倉  
那大概是人家的穀倉（在他們找到小米的地方）。  
That was probably the barn of a house (where they found the millet).

22. rikiburai dni maxamara-ai paridaxai.  
rikibul aidini. maxa m-ara?-ay pa-ridax-ay.  
granary here then AF-take-Fut Caus-sun-Fut  
穀倉 這裡 然後 拿 嘛  
穀倉在這裡了。他們拿（小米）去曬。  
Here was a granary. Then they took the millet to dry in the sun.

23. nahada pijaxun kwaxaruzuN.  
nahada pijaxun, kuah a luzuN.  
exist millet none mortar
有小米，沒臼。

There was millet, but no mortar.
Pazih Texts and Songs

24. madurjarjah raijasija.
matu-ria-riax lai yasia.
AF-Red-seek Asp they
一直找了一向他們
They looked around.

25. maxakikitaai haosamakasadit.
maxa kii-kita?-ay haw sa-maka-sadit.
then Red-see-Fut good SA-MAKA-brick
然後看好的黏板岩(原意指“可用來舖的磚”)
然後他們找到了黏板岩。
Then they found a slate.

26. makasusubuai piaxun u mairih.
maxa su-suru?-ay piaxun u ma-irix.
then Red-pound-Fut millet Sta-smooth
然後捣小米滑
用來搗小米很平滑。
Then they pounded millet and it was smooth.

27. naxada rikipijaxun kwah burajan.
nahada lia ki piaxun, kuah bulayan.
exist Asp millet none pan
有小米但沒有鍋子。
Now that they had millet, but there was no pan.

28. madukarikarijah. maxakikitaai rati ka burajan.
matu-kariakariax, maxa kii-kita?-ay ratik a bulayan.
look around then Red-see-Fut broken pan
他們到處找，然後找到了一個破鍋子。
They looked around and then found a broken pan.

29. maxabaurjakai madukoh batu.
maxa b<as>uriak-ay mu-dukuh batu.
then Prg-make-Fut AF-prop up stone
然後要製作石
他們把石頭支撐起來（做灶）。
They propped up stones (to make a stove).
30. sasai

“sasay-Kn lia kuah hapuy?”
what to do-PF Asp none fire
怎麼辦了沒有火
「沒有火，怎麼辦？」(他們自己問道)
“What shall we do without fire?” (they asked themselves)

31. maxaduduruai

maxa du-du-lu?-ay ayam a kidis, “usa siw manu babaw kawas then Red-send-Fut bird big black drongo go you far above sky
然後推派鳥大卷尾(鳥秋)去你遠上天
arai hapui.
ara-i hapuy.”
take-ImP fire
拿火
然後他們推派一隻大卷尾鳥,「你到遠處天上去取火！
Then they sent a big black drongo (bird) to get it, “You go far away to the sky above to get fire!”

32. mukusa raisja mara kuir.

m-ukusa lai sia m-ar a kuila, m<s>a-sakKl-ay putiuk lia ki hapuy.
AF-go Asp it AF-take although AF-Prg-arrive-Fut extinguish Asp fire
去了牠拿雖然快到達熄了火
雖然牠去取了(火回來),但快到達時火卻熄滅了。
Although it went to get fire, as it was arriving, the fire extinguished.

33. makamadukarikarja.

maxa madukari ariax lia.
then look around Asp
然後找找了
他們到處找。
They looked around.

34. maxakikitaai

maxa ki-kita?-ay xaxawas p<a>uzut.
then Red-see-Fut vine drill
然後看肉藤鑽子
他們看到了肉藤和鑽子(生火的材料)。
Then they saw a vine and a drill (i.e., materials to make a fire).
Pazih Texts and Songs

35. azam a maxaxatan jasija kausa.
   azKm a ma-ha-hatan yasia kausa.
   suddenly AF-Red-laugh they two
   他們倆忽然高興地笑起來。
   All of a sudden they two became very happy and laughed.

36. makaxataxatan jasija kausa.
   maka-hata-hatan yasia kausa.
   MAKA-Red-happy they two
   他們兩人真的很高興。
   Both of them were really very happy.

37. maxamaramai piaxunu mairih.
   maxa ma-ra-ramay piaxun ma-iriixa.
   then AF-Red-cook millet Sta-smooth
   他們煮滑潤的小米。
   They cooked the well pounded millet.

38. piarai isija rja maxa-raramaxai ruburubu daxK.
   pialay isia lia maxa raa-rarum-ay ruburubu daxK.
   since that then Red-increase-Fut below ground
   從此那然後要增加人的下面地
   From then on, they would like to increase human population.

39. sasaiKnirja kuwah a sausu.
   "sasay-Kn lia kuah a sawsaw?" maxa-hinis-ay yasia kausa.
   what to do-PF Asp none people MAXA-mind-Fut they two
   「沒有什麼人，怎麼辦呢？」他們兩人很煩惱。
   "What shall we do without many people?" those two people were worried.

40. maxaxirKd dai jasja kausa.
   maxa xirKd-ay yasia kausa.
   then unite-Fut they two

224
Then those two people got married.
41. maxaparisanai rakkihan mamar KN.
   maxa parisan-ay rakkihan mamalKN.
   then give birth-Fut baby boy
   然後要生子孩子男
   他們生了個男孩。
   Then they had a baby boy.

42. pialai isia rja maxa naxadaai aubil a baua.
    pialay isia lia, maxa nahadaʔ-ay aubil a baua.
    since that Asp then exist-Fut succeeding generation
    從此那了才有後續同一代
    從那時起，就有後代的人了。
    From then on, they had the succeeding generation

43. maxa rara Nadai sinusana kaduxu.
    ma-xara la-laNad-ay sinusana kaduxu.
    AF-call Red-name-Fut use? incantation
    取名名字用咒語
    他們念咒語來取名字。
    They named their babies by chanting incantations.

44. ada Na a rarKd usa paxaisiasu arausu rabaxan.
    adaN a rarus usa paxaisiasu arausu rabaxan
    one group go become Hoanya south
    有一群人去變成北投蕃跟南投蕃(洪雅人)。
    A group of people went to become Hoanya people.

45. maxa makawasai.
    maxa makawas-ay.
    then talk-Fut
    然後要說話
    然後他們要說話(念咒語)了。
    Then they would talk (by chanting incantations).

46. adaNa rarKd usa paxaisiasju budor.
    adaN a rarus usa paxaisiasiu budor.
    one group go become Papora village name
一 群 去 變成 大肚蕃
有一群人到大肚社（巴布拉）去成為巴布拉人。
A group of people went to the village of Budur to become Papora people.

47. maxamakawasai  minah.
    maxa makawas-ay  minah.
    then talk-Fut  again
 然後 要說話 再
要再說話（念咒語）。
They would talk (by chanting incantations) again.

48. usapaxai siasju balua.
    usa paxaisiasiw  balua.
    go become  Taokas village name
去 變成 房里,水尾,日南,雙寮
變成道卡斯族的人。
They went to the village of Balua (Taokas) and became Taokas people.

49. maramakawasai  mina.
    maxa makawas-ay  minah.
    then talk-Fut  again
然後 要說話 再
要再說話（念咒語）。
They would talk (by chanting incantations) again.

50. usapaxaisiasju tarawil.
    usa paxaisiasiw  talawil.
    go become  village name
去 變成 蜈蚣崙
變成蜈蚣崙的人。
They went to the village of Talawil (Pazih) and became Pazih people.

51. maxamakawasai  minah
    maxa makawas-ay  minah.
    then talk-Fut  again
然後 要說話 再
要再說話（念咒語）。
Then they would talk (by chanting incantations) again.
They went to the villages of Arux (Pazih) and Auran (Pazih) and became Pazih people.
53. maxamakawasai minah
   maxa makawas-ay minah.
   then talk-Fut again

然後 要說話 再

要再說話（念咒語）。

Then they would talk (by chanting incantations) again.

54. usapaxai siasju narusai
   usa paxaisiasiw lalusay.
   go become village name

去 變成 阿里史

變成阿里史的人。

They went to the village of Lalusay (Pazih) and became Pazih people.
Text 3. 射太陽 Shooting the Sun

1. tadudo aumina makuai nibara
   ta-dudu-aw minah makuay nibara.
   let's-tell-Fut again personal name
   將講 再 人名
   (我)再講有關 Makuay Nibara 的故事。
   (I)'ll tell you about Makuay Nibara again.

2. mausa hajaku. muririx binaju.
   ma-usa'?-ay aku mu-riix binayu.
   AF-go-Fut I AF-check-traps mountain
   去 我 巡查陷阱 山
   我去山裡巡察陷阱。
   "I'll go to the mountains to check traps," (he said.)

3. makamjatautaunai rauhiro puzadirN.
   maxa ?? rawil u buzux adKN.
   then ??2 bow3 and arrow ready
   準備 弓 和 箭 已預備好的,齊備的
   (他)準備好弓和箭。
   Then (he) prepared for a bow and arrows.

4. makamasakrai rjaka pasura.
   maxa4 ma-sakKl-ay riak a ??5.
   then AF-arrive-Fut good place(??)
   然後 將到 好 地方
   (他)到達一個好地方。
   Then (he) arrived at a good place.

2 Glossed by Asai as 準備 (prepare).
3 Glossed by Asai as 銃 (gun).
4 maka- or maxa- which occurs very often in this text could not be a prefix, but a type of conjunction such as 'and then'.
5 Glossed by Asai as 良處 (good place).
5. makabaurjakai parau⁶ paxirihan⁷.
maxa bauriak-ay pazay pa-kizih-Kn
then make-Fut glutinous rice Caus-put down-PF
然後 將 做 糯米 放下
(他) 做湯圓 並 放下。
(He) made glutinous rice dumpling (and) put it down.

6. maxamaitokuai. makuainibara. maxakikitaai. rohotomuris.
maxa m-a-ituku-ay makuai nibara maxa-ki-kita-ay ruhut-u-muris⁸.
then AF-Prg-sit-Fut personal name MAXA-Red-see-Fut antelope
然後 將 坐 人 名 看到 羚羊
Makuai Nibara 坐下 並 看著 一 隻 羚羊 下來。
Makuai Nibara was sitting and looked at an antelope.

7. maxararakadai makuonibara, raka dinirja rohoto muris.
maxa la-lakad-ay makuai nibara, lakad-Kn lia ruhut-u-muris.
then Red-shoot-Fut personal name shot-PF Asp antelope
然後 射 人 名 射中 了 羚羊
Makuai Nibara 射箭，山羊 被 射中 了。
Makuai Nibara was shooting, and the antelope was shot.

8. maxamaraai rja maxatata xaïjai.
maxa m-ara?-ay lia maxa ta-tahay-ay lia.
then AF-catch-AF Asp then Red-kill-Fut Asp
然後 捕 了 然後 殺 了
他 捕 了 他 並 殺 了 他 (羚羊)。
He took it and killed it.

---
⁶ Glossed by Asai as (dumpling).
⁷ Glossed by Asai as 見 (look at).
⁸ muris 'goat' and ruhut- 'to come down', and the whole phrase ruhut-u-muris most likely means 'goat crawling on the cliffs, i.e. antelope'.
Pazih Texts and Songs

9. makamaaxupudaxai xoma kiniburan.
   maxa xaaxu-pudah-ay xuma kinixidan
   then return-Fut home nearby
   然後回家附近

He returned nearby his home.

10. maxakikitaai mamais nisia. kita sian rja.
    maxa ki-kita-ay mamais nisia. kita siaKn lia.
    然後看妻子他的看仔細地了
    他的妻子仔細地看了。
    His wife looked carefully.

11. kuah pasipu. kuhai isija pasipu.
    kuah paasipu. kuah-ay isia paasipu.
    無有胰臟沒有他胰臟
    沒有胰臟。牠（羚羊）沒有胰臟。
    There was no pancreas. That (antelope) had no pancreas.

12. makadudururai adam a kuai.
    maxa du-dulu?-ay adam-a-kuai rakihan.
    然後派遣人名兒子
    (她)派她的兒子Adam-a-Kuai去辦事。
    (She) sent (her) son Adam-a-Kuai on an errand.

13. kaidida(h)xadoa usakitai. kita siaun rja. kaizaudK10.
    "kai-dida hauha usa kita-i." kita siaKn lia. kai-za KdKr.
    在那裡確定去看看仔細地了在那真的
    Be over there certain go look-Lmp look carefully Asp. be-there really

---

9 k<i>ixid-an ‘nearby’ or t<i>aubur-an?? Cf. taubur ‘men's house’.
10 Glossed by Asai ‘exist’.
「應該還在那裡。去找一找（胰臟）！」他仔細地找，果真在那裡。

"It must be over there. Go and look for it!" He looked carefully, and it was there.
Pazih Texts and Songs

14. maka matabirixai adam a kuai.
   maxa ma-tabilih-ay adam-a-kuay.
   then return-Fut personal name

然後回去人名

然後 Adam-a-Kuay回去。

Then Adam-a-Kuay went back.

15. maxamasak Krai xuma kiniburan.
    maxa xa-sakKI-ay xuma kinixidan
    then Red-arrive-Fut home nearby

然後抵達家附近

他到家的附近了。

He arrived nearby his home.

16. talu-lau axarKkKt di rja.
    taruraw axa-rKkKt di isia.
    eaves11 just-right at that

屋簷剛好在那

他剛到屋簷(?)

He just arrived there at the eaves(?)

17. ridax saljusau adama kowai. taxau rarai
    ridax ?? adam-a-kuay taxaw ?
    sun hot,strong12 personal name reach

太陽人名到

炙熱的太陽直射到Adam-a-Kuay….

The hot sun reached Adam a Kuay.

18. maxaxaxKlmKn karau raisija.
    maxa ka-kKxKI-Kn karaw laisia
    then cut off leg like-that

然後切斷腿像那樣

11 Glossed by Asai as 一下(corridor).
12 Glossed as ‘熱, strong’.
His leg was cut off like that.
19. iniraisija makuainibara.
inii laisia makuai nibara.
not like-that\textsuperscript{13} personal name

Makuai Nibara (想)，不應該這樣。
It should not be like that, Makuai Nibara (thought).

20. asai paisu masoxari naki rakihan.
“asay pai siw? ma-suhari naki rakihan.”
what Q you AF-ensnare my child

「你做了什麼？(你)害了我的子。」
“What did you do? (You) did harm to my son.”

m-ai usa'-ay hayaku mu-pana ridax.
AF-Prg-go-Fut I AF-shoot sun

「我要去射太陽。」
“I’ll go to shoot the sun.”

22. maxamaso-ai babisibisji. arim haimini. kadoh aimini. arim
maxa m-asu’-ay ba-bisi-bisi, arim haimini, kaduh haimini,
then AF-bring-Fut Red-Red-seeds, peach this, plum this,

然後帶各種種子桃子這個李子這個

saNas banai.
saNas, banay.
ume-plum, pomelo

梅子 柚子

他帶了許多種子，有桃子、李子、梅子和柚子。
He was bringing various kinds of seeds: this peach, this plum, ume-plum, and pomelo.

\textsuperscript{13} Glossed (that is no good; that should not be).
23. **makamausaai sja makuaniibara.**
   maxa m-a-usa?-ay isia makuai nibara.
   然後 AF-Prg-go-Fut that personal name
   然後 去 那 人名
   Makua Nibura 要去了。
   Then Makuay-Nibura was going.

24. **makamaxasoai wazu takKruban.**
   maxa m-asu?-ay wazu takKrKban.
   then AF-bring-Fut dog dog's name
   然後 帶 狗 狗名
   他帶了一隻名叫 TakKrKban 的狗。
   He took with him the dog TakKrKban.

25. **maxa masakKrai tatKNaBel.**
   maxa ma-sakKI-ay ta-tKNab-an ridax.
   then AF-arrive-Fut place-sunrise sun
   然後 到達 日出處 日
   他終於到達了日出處。
   Then he arrived at the place where the sun came out.

26. **aru ka naisu raraqadai aku.**
   alu ka na isiw laa-lakad-ay aku.
   come thou Red-shoot-Fut I
   來 你 射 我
   「你出來吧！我要射你。」
   "Come! Thou! I'll shoot thee."

27. **rukadurirja. rakadjurai sija.**
   rukad-Kn lia. lakad-Kn lia sia.
   come out-PF Asp shot-PF Asp he
   升 了 射 了 他
   太陽出來，被他射中了。
   It came out, and was shot by him.

28. **suma dadua. inikitaan daran.**
   sKm a dadua. ini kita-an daran.
   dark LIN all not see-LF road
暗 全部 没 看 路
到处都是黑暗一片。看不到路。
*It was all dark. The roads were not visible.*

29. makamatabixai makuai nibara.
    maka-ma-tabilih-ay makuai nibara
    MAKA-AF-return-Fut personal name
    返回 人名
    Makuai Nibara 要回家了。
    *Makuai Nibara was going home.*

30. sassai inirja inikitaan daran.
    "sasay-Kn lia? ini kita-an daran."
    what to do-PF Asp not seen road
    怎麼辦 了 沒 看 路
    「我該怎麼辦？我看不到路。」
    "What shall I do? I can't see the road."

31. wazu takKrKban masu daran.
    wazu takKrKban m-asu daran
    dog dog's name AF-bring road
    狗 狗名 帶 路
    由 TakKrKban 這隻狗帶路。
    *The dog TakKrKban was leading him on the way.*

32. makamasakKrai puNubanai.
    maxa ma-sakKI-ay puNu ba-banay.
    then AF-arrive-Fut trunk pomelos
    然後 將到達 樹幹 柚子
    他們即將到達柚子的樹幹。
    *They would arrive at the trunk of pomelos.*

33. zaqaimina rai sija. maxamasakKrai.
    zakay minah lai sia, maxa ma-sakKI-ay
    walk again Asp he then AF-arrive-Fut
    走 再了 他 然後 將到達
    他繼續走了，就到達（那裡）了。
    *He walked again and would arrive there.*
He groped in the dark and touched the ume-plum tree.

He walked again, and arrived by groping in the dark. This was the plum tree.

He walked again, and arrived by groping in the dark. This was the peach tree.

He walked again, and arrived by groping in the dark. This was (his) house.
Pazih Texts and Songs

E. Pazih Text Recorded by Ino

The following Pazih text was recorded by Ino in Puli, in 1897 (?), edited by Paul Li, with assistance of Pazih speakers, Pan Rong-Jang and Pan Jin-yu in February 1997. The Japanese translation for each sentence was given by Ino. The first line in boldface is the original transcription by Ino, while the second line is as edited by Li. This text is different in nature from all the others, so the format is also somewhat different. It is divided into eleven sections, as Ino did in his manuscripts. The Japanese translation was given by Ino, while the Chinese and English translations were by Paul Li.

第一節

1. kaidini ka, nahaza muhalid u, rakehal a rima a sau,
   kaidini ka, nahaza mu-xalid u rakehal a rima a saw.
   當這裡有小孩手牽著人。
   There is a person holding a child's hand.

2. rakehal u isia ka, paiyatudu wazu,
   rakehal u isia ka, p<y>yatudu wazu.
   那個小孩指著狗。
   The child is pointing at a dog.

3. wazu ka, mikita u babao kahhui a ayamu, ka marawa,
   wazu ka, mi-kita u babaw kahuy a ayam, ka ma-lawa.
   那個小孩指著鳥。
The dog looking at a bird on the tree is barking.

第二節

1. rakehal u, imine ka baoryak binayu, iu ralbun ki ituk babao,
   rakhal u imini ka, bauriak binayu iu alKb-Kn di ituk babaw.
   child this make mountain and close-PF Loc top above
   小孩做山且圍起來頂上

   小児山、（其上池鱟）。
   這個小孩堆山並在上面圍起（池子）來。
   This child was building a hill and made a pond on top of it.

2. paokusa-an u dalum laike lubongu ka, maha darudaru lea,
   paukusa?-an u dalum lai ki rubuN ka, maxa-darudaru lia.
   pour-LF water Asp Nom pond Conj become-waterfall Asp
   倒入了池子，變成瀑布了
   把水倒入池子，變成瀑布。
   He poured water into the pond and it became a waterfall.

3. dalum darudaru ka, murahot maha rahong di ruburubu binayu
   dalum darudaru ka, mu-rahut maxa-raxuN di ruburubu binayu.
   water waterfall Top AF-flow become-river Loc below mountain
   水瀑布流到山腳下變成河川。
   瀑布的水流到山腳下變成河川。
   The water of the waterfall flowed below the mountain to become a stream.

4. pusongud-an ki rahung,
   pu-suNud-an ki raxuN.
   build-bridge-LF river
   架橋河川
   川橋。
A bridge was made over the stream.

A bridge was made over the stream.
第三節

1. karu turao a baoryak u alis a rakehal, baoryak u daorik ka kalu
kalu turaw a bauriak u alis a rakihan, bauriak u daurik ka kalu
use ear of make rabbit child make eye use
用 茅穗 做 兔 小孩 做 眼睛 用
kadoh a, kaduh a.
李子
小孩用穀子的空殼做兔子，眼睛則用李子做。
The child made a rabbit with a dried ear of miscanthus and its eyes with plum.

2. kitai huhul naike rahal ka sangira na,
kita-i huhul lai ki rahal ka saNira na.
look-Imp carefully Asp Nom mouth and ear
看仔細地 嘴巴 和 耳朵
仔細地看那嘴巴和耳朵！
Look at the mouth and ears carefully!

3. sangira ka halupas, rahal ka mahatulu a buiz,
saNira ka halupas, rahal ka maxa-turu a buiz.
ear long mouth become-three split apart
耳朵 長 嘴巴 變三 裂開
耳朵很長，嘴巴裂為三片。
The ears are long, and the mouth is hare-lipped.

4. paikulul a alis ka mauduh,
paikulul a alis ka ma-idKh.
leap Lig rabbit Top Sta-fast
跳 兔子 快
兔，早。
兔子跳得很快。
The rabbit leaps fast.
第四節

1. tutūŋap a lizaha ki ohoni,

   tK-tKNa-b a rizax ki uhuni.

   上升 太陽 現在

   今日

   現在太陽正要昇起。

   The sun is rising now.

2. mutūŋap a lizaha liaka, pudusah a ilas ka marupai marupai,

   mK-tKNa-p a rizax lia ka pKdKsax a ilas ka ma-lupay ma-lupay.

   昇起 太陽 了 光 月 暗淡 暗淡

   太陽昇起，月光漸漸暗淡下去。

   The sun is rising, and the moonlight is waning.

3. pudusah pudusah aike wazan u rahong, babatobatu ka

   pKdKsax pKdKsax lai ki wazan u raxuN, ba-batu-batu ka

   明亮 明亮 中 河川 石頭等等

   kita-an hulu lea,

   kitaʔ-an hulu lia.

   看見 仔細

   河川中漸漸明亮，可以看清石頭等。

   It becomes brighter and brighter in the stream, in which the stones become clear.
張氏文集

第五節

1. kalu daorik a mikita, kalu rahal a makawas, kalu sangera a
kalu daorik a mi-kita, kalu rahal a ma-kawas, kalu sanira a
use eye Lig AF-see use mouth Lig AF-speak use ear Lig
用眼看，用嘴巴說，用耳朵聽。
tumala,
tumala.
hear
聽
用眼睛看，用嘴巴說，用耳朵聽。
(We) see with eyes, talk with a mouth, and hear with ears.

2. daorik u sangera ka dusa, rahal ka adadumud,
daorik u sanira ka dusa, rahal ka adadumut.
eye and ear Top two mouth Top only one
眼睛和耳朵二個嘴巴只有一個
目耳二口，嘴只一。
眼睛和耳朵各有兩個，嘴巴只有一個。
There are two eyes and ears, while there is only one mouth.

3. mahaki tumala mikita ka pakadahon, makawas ka pkatatengun,
mahaki tumala mi-kita ka paka-dahu, ma-kawas ka paka-tatiN-Kn.
seem hear AF-see Caus-much AF-speak Caus-little-PF
似乎聽見使多說話使少
似乎聽得多，看得多，卻說得少。
Therefore (we) hear and see a lot, but to talk only a little.
第六節

1. rakehal u mamais imine ka, azang-a-sasonan azang-a-sasonan a rakihal u mamais imini ka adaN a sasunan, adaN a sasunan a child girl this one Lig morning one Lig morning Lig
小孩 女 這個 每一 早上 每一 早上
mudukul maha-hatulai a barabo,
AF-pick become-hundred-Fut snail
拾撿 接近一百 田螺
此小兒 每朝 百 拾。
這女孩每天早上撿近一百個田螺。
This girl picks up about a hundred snails every morning.

2. plyalai ohone, isiza dali maluhoso a mudukul liaka, maha-sahanai
pialay uhuni, isiza dali maluhusu a mK-dKkKl lia ka, maxa-sahanay begin now ten day in that way AF-pick become-thousand-Fut
開始 現在 十天 如此 拾撿 接近一千
lia'a,
lia?a.
Asp
了
了 十天 拾 接近一千
以後接著十天撿的話，就會撿近一千個了。
If she keeps picking for ten days from now on, there will be nearly a thousand snails.

3. talukun a barabo, ka ryaka kakanun,
talKk-Kn a barabu ka riak a ka-kan-Kn. cook-PF snail Top good Red-eat-PF
煮 田螺 很好 吃
煮的田螺 很好吃。
Cooked snails are good to eat.
第七節

1. *dadang a rabahan-dale ki ohoni,*
dadaN a rabaxan dali ki uhuni.
暖夏日子現在

暖夏日子現在

現在是溫暖的夏天

It is warm summer now.

2. *rakehal ka maso wazu, mahadas di binayu,*
rakihal ka m-asu wazu, ma-hadas di binayu.
小孩帶狗旅遊山上

小孩帶著狗在山上玩。

*The child takes along with him a dog and is playing in the mountain."

3. *ruborubo binayu ka nahaza rahong, de barubarud rahong isia*
rubu-rubu binayu ka nahaza raxuN, di barK-barKt raxuN isia
下山有河流旁邊河流那

山下有河流，河的兩旁有許多稻田和旱田。

*There is a stream below the mountain, and there are many rice paddies and swidden fields on both sides of the stream."

4. *kaizizaka babaha saw a marunguhu,*
kaiziza ka baabah a saw a ma-ruNuh.
在那邊許多翻土

在那邊許多人翻土

"人土居。"
Many people are turning the soil over there.

在那邊有許多人在挖地。
第八節

1. ahowan a dare inapa a hahehahe-mai a paranaha ka paizaho
   ahuan a dali in-apa a hahihahimai a paranah ka p<za>izaux
   evening  day Prf-carry cargo?  boat Prg-go down
   傍晚  日 裝載 貨物? 船 下去

   u rahong,
   u raxuN.
   river
   河川
   夕暮荷積舟川下行。
   傍晚載貨的船順流而下。
   In the evening the boat carrying cargo is going down the stream.

2. uka de myadoa binayu a daran ka tatarao noang a rakehal,
   uka di miadua binayu a daran ka taa-taraw nuaN a rakihal.
   other that yonder mountain road Conj Red-chase carabao child
   其他那邊山路上趕牛小孩
   又那邊山路小孩趕牛而去。
   And, a child is chasing a carabao on the mountain path over there.

3. noang lia ka ini kapajie ki süsumai panate a muhalid u
   nuaN lia ka ini ka-apa-Kn ki sKK-sKm-ay panati a mu-xalid u
   carabao Nom not KA-carry-PF Red-dark-Fut slowly AF-pull Obl
   牛主不揹暗的慢慢地拉著
   paripari,
   paripari.
   cart
   車
   牛暗“”、“”車“”行。1

---

1 According to Ino’s original notes, it reads: Despite the darkness, the carabao pulls (away) the cart slowly.
The load is too heavy for the carabao, and as it is getting dark, it pulls the cart slowly.
Pazih Texts and Songs

第九節

1. rakehal u mamalung kaidi kinihizan u lubongu babao bato a
   rakihal a mamalKN kaidi kinixidan u rubuN babaw batu a
   child man stay beside pond above stone
   小孩 男 在 旁邊 池上 石

ma-tahapes,
ma-taxapis.
AF-fish
釣魚

男兒池上石上魚釣居。
男孩在池旁的石頭上釣魚。
A boy is fishing on the rock by a pond.

2. ryaka mupuzaha babazoai siatu a rakehal u mamais lia,
   liaka mu-puzah a ba-bazu?-ay siatu a rakihal u mamais lia.
   then AF-come Red-wash-Fut clothes child girl Asp

然後來洗衣小孩女

那時女孩來洗衣服。
Then a girl came to wash clothes.

3. ike rakehal u mamalung lyaka, babao bato denika ryak a
   iki rakihal u mamalKN lyaka, “babaw batu dini ka riak a
   that child man then above stone here Top good
   那小孩男然後上石這裡好

babazu an aonisu lailaka, mukusa di myadoa
ba-bazu?-an, auni siw,” laila ka, m-ukusa di miadua
Red-wash clothes-LF for you in that way AF-go that yonder
洗衣給你那樣去那邊

kinihezan lia,
kinixidan lia.
beside

岸邊

男兒石上洗ru^

[252]
那個男孩說，「這石頭上面可以洗衣服，讓你洗。」他就到對岸去了。

The boy said, "It is good to wash clothes on the rock here. This place is for you." Then he went to the other side (of the stream).
第十節

1. rakehal rabuha ka ibaun niki ina,
   rakihal rabKx ka iba-Kn niki ina.
   孩子 嬰 孩 抱著 屬 母
   小 嬰 母

   嬰兒被母親抱著。
   The baby is carried by the mother in her arms.

2. nimiso a mamaha, pauzaha langu a mangasa, babaha u kiaraun
   nimirsiw a mamah p<a>uzah laNu a ma-Nasa, ba-baxa u kaarKn
   他的 哥哥 正在來 庭院 到達 給 漂亮的
   a arimu,
   a arim.
   桃子

   他的哥哥正從外面進來，給他漂亮的桃子。
   His elder brother came back and gave him pretty peaches.

3. iki inaduan u arimu a karaha ka niki aba a tinu'un,
   iki in-adu-an u arim a kalaha ka niki aba a t<in>u?un.
   那 放 桃子 籃子 父親 做

   放那桃子的籃子是父親做的。
   The basket containing the peaches was made by Father.

4. abasan-soaji yamini ka hanisai a kawas,
   abasan suazi yamini ka hanisay a kawas?
   兄姊 弟妹 這些 多少 岁

   這對兄弟(或兄妹)幾歲？
How old are these brothers?
5. mamaha ka hasub a kawas, soaji ka turu a kawas,

dr: elder brother

The elder is five years old, and the younger is three.
第十一節

1. myadoa karid ka kizuhu a sau, myadine a wazan u
miadua karit ka kizKx a saw, miadini a wazan u
that yonder swidden field Top stand person here center
那邊 旱田 站著 人 這邊 中
omaomaha ka pahoruma,
umamah ka paxuruma.
rice field Top plant
稻田 種植
那邊的旱田站著人，這邊的稻田在插秧。
People are standing in the swidden field over there, while (the others) are planting rice in the rice paddy over here.

2. baruz daran ka padalak a hapui, sau ka mai dalam ki daran
baraz a daran ka padalak a hapuy, saw ka m<a>italam di daran
side road Top burn fire person Top AF-Prg-run road
旁 路 燃燒 火 人 在跑 路
u disu,
u disiw.
there
那裡
路 燃火 人 路走。
路旁燃著火，人在那條路跑。
A fire is burning on the side of the road, while people are running on the road.

3. manu a babao binayu kikita-an a ilas, kialehe a rahong ka
maanu a babaw binayu ki-kita?-an a ilas, kiallh a raxu? ka
far above mountain Red-see-LF moon near river
遠 上 山 看見 月 近 河川
maokusa a paranaha,
m-a-ukusa a paranah.
AF-Prg-go boat
去 船
遠山上月見近川舟行。
遠處山上看到月亮，近溪邊有人要到船那邊去。

*Far above the mountain we can see the moon, nearby the stream people are going on the boat.*
Part Two: Pazih Songs 巴宰歌謠

A. Pazih Songs in Auran 愛蘭的巴宰歌謠

愛蘭潘金玉女士（87 歲），於 2001 年 6 月 3 日，在埔里鎮愛蘭里獨唱童謠四首、祭典歌 ayan 四首和聖詩二首，由李壬癸錄音、記音、翻譯。

The following four children's songs and four ritual songs ayan were sung by Pan Jin-yu (female, 87) on June 3, 2001 in Auran, Puli, and recorded, transcribed and translated by Paul Li.

Children's Songs 童謠

Song 1. tautaukua 螞蟻王 Leader of Ants

1. tautaukua pakupakusia.
   leader subordinate
   首領 屬下

   Leader and subordinates

2. alu, ta-kan-i niam a sumay
   come let's-eat-imp we rice
   來 咱吃 我們 饭
   iu punu luxut!
   and head deer
   和 頭 鹿

   Come, let's eat our rice and the head of a deer!

3. alu, ta-kan-i sumay iu
   come let's-eat-imp rice and
   來 咱吃 米飯 和
   punu luxut!

Song 2. punKN 螞 Cicadas

1. laiai lai piaw.
   cry of cicadas
   蟑叫聲

2. piaw sauri, sauri batu.
   find place place egg
   找 地方 在那地方 蛋

   (The cicadas) look for places to lay their eggs.

3. batu raki-han, raki yauzu.
   egg child baby come out to act
   卵 子 子 出來活動
卵孵子，小蟬出來活動。
*The eggs hatch, and the baby cicadas come out to act.*

4. tuntun amayuk.
flap wings fly
振翅 飛
振翼而飛。
*They flap their wings and fly.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

**Song 3. badi alu** 同伴來 *Friends, Come*

1. badi, alu, ta-kita?-i away.
   *friend come let’s-look-imp moon*
   *同伴 來 咱看吧 月亮*
   *同伴，來，咱們看月亮吧！*
   *Friends, come, let’s look at the moon!*

**Song 4. tulala, rapiaw, ayam** 欣賞花、蝴蝶、鳥之歌 *Flowers, Butterflies, and Birds*

1. ita, ita dadua
   *we we all*
   *咱 咱 大家*
   *咱們，咱們大家！*
   *We, we, all*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>第一版</th>
<th>第二版</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ta-kita?-i tulala</td>
<td>ta-kizib-i tulala!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let's-look-imp flower</td>
<td>let's-pluck-imp flower</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>咱看 花</td>
<td>咱摘 花</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>咱們看花吧！</td>
<td>咱們摘花吧！</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Let's look at the flowers!</em></td>
<td><em>Let's pluck the flowers!</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lubahiNi iu risilaw.</td>
<td>ta-zubu?-aw di punu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>red and white</td>
<td>let's-wear-Fut head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>紅和白</td>
<td>咱-插-將 頭</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>紅色和白色。</td>
<td>咱們要插在頭上。</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Red and white.</em></td>
<td><em>Let’s wear them on the head!</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

   | ay, kiaarKn tulala. | ay, kiaarKn haiisw ?i. |
   | oh beautiful flower | oh beautiful you |
   | 啊 美 花 | 啊 美 你 |
   | 啊，花很美麗！ | 啊，你很美麗！ |
   | *Ay, beautiful flowers!* | *Ay, you are so beautiful!* |

2. ita, ita dadua.
   *we we all*
咱 咱 大家
咱們，咱們大家！
*We, we, all*
ta-kita?-i rapiaw na!
*let's look-Imp butterfly*
咱看 蝴蝶
咱們看蝴蝶吧！
*Let's look at the butterflies!*

tabarak iu risilaw.
yellow and white
黃 和 白
黃色和白色。
*Yellow and white.*
ay, kiaar Kn rapiaw na!
*Ay beautiful butterfly*
啊 美 蝴蝶
啊！美麗的蝴蝶！
*Ay, beautiful butterflies!*

3. ita, ita dadua.
we we all
咱 咱 大家
咱們，咱們大家！
*We, we, all*
ta-kita?-i ayam na!
*let's look-Imp bird*
咱看 鳥
咱們看鳥吧！
*Let's look at the birds!*
kaidi babaw di kahuy.
at above Loc tree
牠在樹上。
*They are on the trees.*
ay, kiaar Kn ayam na!
*a beautiful bird*
啊 美 鳥
啊！美麗的鳥兒！
*Ay, beautiful birds!*

263
Editor's note: This children's song is sung with Pazih words but with Japanese melody. Pan Jin-yu said she had learned it from a missionary named *tata pholat* ‘Aunt Pholat’ at a Sunday School when she was twelve or thirteen years old.

説明：這是一首童謠，使用日本曲調，但用巴宰歌詞。潘金玉年小時（約十二、三歲）上主日學，傳教士所教（稱她為*tata pholat*）。
B. Ritual Songs in Auran 愛蘭的祭典歌

Song 1. 大水氾濫後分居 Separation after the Big Flood

The words of the following three ritual songs were based on a Japanese written document but revised by Pan Rung-jang, narrated by Pan Jin-yu, and transcribed and translated by Paul Li, in Auran, Puli, June 9, 1998. They were sung by Pan Jin-yu and recorded by Paul Li on Jan. 6, 1999, and then video-taped on June 3, 2001.

這三首傳統歌謠都是潘榮章根據日治時期的記錄所改寫的歌,再由潘金玉念詞，李壬癸記音，1998年6月9日於埔里鎮愛蘭里。日治時期伊能嘉矩曾記錄大水氾濫之歌，潘榮章就根據它改寫歌詞。潘金玉唱，1999年1月6日李壬癸錄音，2001年6月3日重新錄音及錄音。

1. ayan nu¹ ayan, ayan nu laita.
   Let's sing ayan, the song of our origin.

2. ayan nu ayan ta-du-du iu maa nu.
   Let's talk and far
   Talking about our origin, it's ages in the past.

3. d<a>uduw-ay lia ha ka, uba pini, ada pini.
   We have to trace back to (two sisters), Uba Pini and Ada Pini.

4. maxa maa-kita'-ay tabanan ma-taru.
   then Rec-meet-Fut name Sta-big

¹ The function of nu in this sentence is not clear. The initial n could be due to the liaison of the preceding form ayan. If so, then the vowel u 'and' conjoins two ayan.
然後，將相見，男名大然後要和長輩 Tabanan 相見。

Then they would meet with the elder Tabanan.
5. maxa maa-kawas-ay, “mausay pai mu?”
then Rec-talk-Fut will go Q you
然後 交談 去 你們
他們交談。(他問，)「你們要到哪裡去？」
Then they talked to each other, “Where are you going?”

6. tabanan ma-taru maxa m<a>a-kawas-ay.
name Sta-big then AF-Prg-tell-Fut
男名 大 然後 交談
她們要告訴長輩 Tabanan。
They would tell the elder Tabanan.

7. abasan suadi, “mausay haiyami.
ever sister youner sister will go we
姊 妹 去 我們
姊妹兩人說，「我們要去
The two sisters said, “We are going

8. mausay maxa-pazih, pazih si ki daya.”
will go become-Pazih Pazih Nom east, above
去 變成巴宰 巴宰 東,上方
要去當巴宰人，巴宰在東方。」
Going to become Pazih people, the Pazih in the east.”

重複 1-8 Repeat 1-8

9. tK-tKNap nu rizax, tK-tKNap nu rizax.
Red-rise sun Red-rise sun
出來,上升 太陽 出來,上升 太陽
太陽在升上來，太陽在升上來。
The sun was rising; the sun was rising.

10. manaw amisan ka, manaw rabaxan.
toward north toward south
向 北 向 南
向北再向南。
To the north and then to the south.
Pazih Texts and Songs

11. daudauduway iu tau mamauway.
   male name and male name
   男名 和 男名
   Daudauduway 和 Tau mamauway.

12. maxa ma-sakKI-ay tabanan ma-taru.
    then AF-arrive-Fut male name Sta-big
    然後 到達 男名 大
    他們到達長輩 Tabanan 的地方。

13. maxa pabarKt ki laihayu haw riak.
    then reply to each other Nom personal name good good
    然後 相應答 人名(?) 好 好
    Laihayu 他們互相問好。

    will go we then place place name
    去 我們 然後 地方 地名
    「我們要到 Saraumaw (今梨山?) 那地方去。
    "We are going to Saraumaw Mountain.

15. ana maxa-ruaru, tabanan ma-taru."
    don't produce-tears male name Sta-big
    別 傷心 男名 大
    別傷心，Tabanan 長輩。」
    Don't be sad, the elder Tabanan."

16. inihaw isia maxa p<a>u-suNud-ay.
    good there then Prg-build-bridge-Fut
    好 那裡 然後 要舖橋
    在那裡似乎正要鋪橋。
    Then they were building a bridge.

17. suNut ma-bidabit i tatu maumauwan.
    bridge AF-wobble name of an old man
    橋 搖晃 老人名
The old man, Tatu Maumauwan, was staggering on the bridge.

Tatu Maumauwan slipped off on the bridge.
19. tatu maumauwan ka, tatu maumauwan.
   name of an old man name of an old man
   老人名 老人名
   老人 Tatu Maumauwan 就是 Tatu Maumauwan。
   The old man Tatu Maumauwan was Tatu Maumauwan.

20. usa lai siw, mausay yaku. mausay lai yaku.
    go Asp you will go I will go Asp I
    你去了，我也要去。我要去了。
    If you go, I’ll go also. I’ll go also.

21. nahada luxut ka, luxud- u nuaN.
    exist deer deer ox
    有鹿鹿牛(公鹿)
    There was a deer, and it was a male deer.

22. tatu maumauwan mausay maxa-daxu.
    name of an old man will go become-savage
    老人名要去當生番
    老人 Tatu Maumauwan 他要到山地去當生番。
    The old man named Tatu Maumauwan would go to become a savage.

23. ana maxa-ruaru, tabanan ma-taru.
    don’t produce-tears personal name Sta-big
    別傷心人名大
    別傷心，Tabanan 長輩。
    Don’t be sad, the elder Tabanan.

24. aubin a dali ka, maa-?isa-?isakup.
    later day Rec-Red-get together
    日後一直在一起。
    (We’ll) get together later on.

25. hauha ka iu naki, mu-dudu ma-mKrKk.
    sure and my AF-talk AF-unable
確定及我的講話不會
我的話確定只有這些，我不擅言辭。
Certainly all these are what I have to say, and I am not expressive.
26. ayan nu ayan, ayan ni laita. we
根源咱們
咱们唱根源的歌。
Let’s sing ayan, the song of our origin.

27. ayan nu ayan, saysay yawira. what end
根源什麼結束
根源歌到此什麼都结束了。
This is the end of the song of ayan.
Song 2a. mazuah 走標 (完整版) Racing (full version)

1. ayan nu  ayan, ayan ni laita. 
   Gen we
   根源                 咱們
   根源，咱們唱根源。
   Let's sing ayan, the song of our origin.

2. hauha ka imisu dali iu uhuni. 
   sure that day and now
   確定          那        日        和        現在
   確定是那時候的今天。
   It is certain that it is the present time on that day.

3. laila ki isia ma-dudu ki apuan. 
   in that way Nom he AF-talk Nom elderly people
   那樣        他          講            長輩
   The elderly said so.

4. tumala ki apuan k<in>awas ka kasibat. 
   listen Nom elderly people Prf-word instruction
   聽          長輩          話            教誨
   聽長輩教誨的話。
   (We should) listen to the instructions of the elderly.

5. uhuni iu dali ka ma-taru iu razKm. 
   now and day Top Sta-big and New Year
   現今          和            日        大        和        新年
   今天是大新年。
   Today is the New Year's day.

6. abasan u suadi maaka-hata-hatan. 
   elder sibling and younger sibling Rec-Red-happy
   兄姊          和            弟妹        高興
   兄弟姊妹都很高興。
   Brothers and sisters are all happy.
Pazih Texts and Songs

7. ita, ita dadua ka maaka-ria-riak.
   we we all    Top Rec-Red-nice
咱 咱 大家 和好!
咱們大家都要和好！
Let's all be nice to each other!
8. rKtKna taukua ka, laila ki mu-kawas. 
village chief in that way Nom AF-talk 
村頭目那樣講話了。 
The head of the village said so.

9. "uhuni iu dali ka, ma-taru iu razKm." 
now day Sta-big New Year 
「今天是大新年。」
"Today is the great New Year's day."

10. laila ka isia, laila ka imisu. 
in that way that in that way he, that 
他那樣(講)。
That's what he said.

11. nahani ki taubarKnA maamaalKN ma-gizKm. 
come neighbor young men Sta-strong 
鄰村的強壯青年來了。 
The strong young men came from the neighboring villages.

12. nahani mi-talam, mi-talam barKbar. 
come AF-race AF-race flag 
他們來賽跑奪旗。 
They came to race for the flag.

13. imu, imu maamaalKN ka, ma-gizKm dadua. 
you you young men Top Sta-strong all 
你們男青年都很強壯。 
“You young men are all strong.

14. yagira ki ima ka, ana suan taubarKt. 
Bravo! who don't lose neighbor
Whoever participates in the race should work hard, and not to lose to the neighboring villagers."
15. mu-puzah lia ki taubarKt maamaalKN.
AF-come Asp Nom neighbor young men
來了 鄰男青年們
鄰村的少年都來了。
The neighboring young men all came.

16. p<in>a-siatu maamaalKN purarilak dadua.
wear-Prg-clothes young men glitter all
穿衣 男青年們 賣閃光 都
少年們都穿著閃亮的衣服。
The young men all wore clothes in bright color.

17. taubarKt maamaalKN ka, ma-gizKm maamaalKN.
neighbor young men Top Sta-strong young men
鄰男青年們 強 男青年
鄰村的少年很強壯。
The neighboring young men were all strong.

18. nita rKiKn maamaalKN ka, purarilak lubahiN.
our village young men Top glitter red
咱村 男青年們 穿閃亮 紅
咱們村的少年穿閃亮的紅衣。
The young men in our village wore clothes in bright red color.

19. taubarKt maamaalKN pasakKm dadua.
neighbor young men arrive all
鄰男青年們 到達 都
鄰村的少年都到齊了。
The neighboring young men all arrived.

20. m-itun di babaw lia taukua m<a>a-kawas.
AF-rise above Asp chief AF-Prg-tell
起來 上了 長官 在講
長官起來在上面講話了。
The chief rose and was talking from above.

21. laila ka, “uhuni m<a>i-talam barKbar.
in that way Top now AF-Prg-run flag
他那樣說，「現在要賽跑奪旗。」
*He said, "Now you'll be racing for the flag."*
22. taubarKt maamaalKN, nita rKtKn maamaalKN, neighbor young men our village young men
鄰村的少年和咱們村的少年，
The young men from the neighboring village and our village.

23. ma-gizKn dadua, ma-gizKn maamaalKN.*
Sta-strong all Sta-strong young men
壯都強壯男青年們
d大街都很壯，少年們都強壯。」
They are all strong, and the young men are strong.*

24. laila ka, "uhuni ka, ma-zuah di dini.
in that way Top now Top AF-race here
那樣現在走標這裡
(The chief) said, "Now you start racing from here.

25. m<q>talam di daran ka, mata di daya.
AF-Prg-run road toward east
將跑路向東
You'll run on the road to the east.

26. pasakKn daya ka, mata di amisan.
arrive east toward north
到達東向北
After you arrive at the east, then turn to the north.

27. mata di taubarKt ka, balua ni rKiKn.
toward neighbor village name Gen village
向鄰近的 Balua 村。
Then you go to the neighboring village of Balua.

28. imu, imu maamaalKN ma-baza k<in>awas?*
you you young men AF-know Prf-word

You, you young men, do you understand my words (= do you follow me)?
29. laila ka pikadun, laila ka m&lt;i&gt;i-talam.
那樣 出發 了 跑
就那樣出發了，在賽跑了。
*So they set out, and they were racing.*

30. pikadun dadua ma-gizKm maamaalK.N.
set out all Sta-strong young men
全體 強壯 男青年們
全體強壯的少年都出發了。
*All the strong young men set out.*

31. baabah saw ka mu-kawas, “ima ki ma-gizKm?”
many people AF-talk who Nom Sta-strong
多 人 說 誰 強
很多人問，「誰最強？」
*Many people asked, “Who is the strongest?”*

32. “ta-kita?-i ima ka, mi-talam ma-ulal gia.”
let's-look-Imp who AF-run AF-lead Asp
咱看 誰 跑 先 了
「咱們看誰跑的最快！」
*“Let's see who is the fastest runner.”*

old woman old woman Top play-gong Asp gong gong AF-laugh
老婆婆敲鑼了，鑼聲笑聲。
The old woman played the gong, the sounds of the gong, and they were laughing.

34. hauha ki pasakK.n. “ima ki m-ulal gia?”
sure Nom arrive who Nom AF-first Asp
確定 到達 誰 先 了
要確定到達終點。「看誰領先了？
*Make sure that they reach the terminal. “Who is leading?”*

35. p&lt;in&gt;a-siatu lubahiN nita, nita maamaalK.N.
Prg-wear-clothes red we we young men
穿衣 紅 咱 咱 男青年
穿紅衣的是咱們的男青年。
The ones in red are our young men.
36. takita ima ki ma-gizKm iu m-ulal.
    let's look who Nom Sta-strong and AF-lead
    咱看誰強和先
    咱們看誰最強壯和領先。
    *Let's see who is the strongest and leading.*

37. haiha ki asilu, haiha ki damuri.
    seem Nom personal name seem Nom personal name
    似乎是人名似乎是人名
    似乎是Asilu和Damuri（領先）。
    *It seems to be Asilu and Damuri (who are leading).*

38. m-ulal pasakKn ka, nita, nita maamaalKN.
    AF-lead arrive our our young men
    先到達咱們的少年。
    *The ones who led and arrived first are our young men.*

39. taukua iu baabah saw, ma-hatan iu hatan.
    chief and many people AF-laugh and laugh
    長官和多人笑和笑
    長官和許多人都笑了又笑。
    *The chief and many people laughed and laughed.*

40. m-itun lia ki taukua ka mu-kawas iu ma-taru.
    AF-stand up Asp Nom chief AF-talk and Sta-big
    長官站了長官說和大
    長官站了起來大聲說。
    *The chief stood up and said in a loud voice,*

41. uhuni iu razKm ka, mi-talam barKbar.
    now and New Year's day AF-run flag
    現在又過年跑旗
    現在過年賽跑奪旗。
    *“Today is the New Year's day and you raced for the flag.”*

42. suan lia ki taubarKn, ma-sika-sikat.
    lose Asp Nom neighbor Sta-Red-shy
輸了鄰很難為情
鄰村的少年輸了，很不好意思。

The neighboring villagers lost, and they were embarrassed.
43. taukua ka mu-dudu lia, “ta-?araway-i lai nital!”
   chief AF-talk Asp let’s-sing and dance-Imp Asp we
   長官 講 了 咱牽田 了 咱
   The chief said, “Let’s sing and dance.”

44. baabah saw ka, ma-hatan; hauha ka, imisu.
   many people AF-laugh sure that
   很多人笑，那是確定的。
   Many people laughed, and that was certain.

45. hauha ka iu naki mu-dudu ma-mKrKk.
   sure and my AF-talk AF-unable
   我的話確定只有這些，我不擅言辭。
   That’s all what I have to say, and I don’t know how to say it appropriately.

46. ayan nu ayan, saysay yawira.
   everything end
   根源 根源 每件 結束
   根源歌到此結束。
   The song of ayan ends here.
Song 2b. mazuah 走標 (短版) Racing (short version)

1. ayan nu ayan ayan nu laita.
   根源 咱們
   根源，咱們唱根源。
   Let's sing ayan, the song of our origin.

2. hauha ka imisu dali iu uhuni.
   確定 那 日 和 現在
   確定是那時候的今天。
   It is certain that it is the present time on that day.

3. laila ka isia mu-dudu ki apuan.
   長輩他那樣講話。
   The elderly said so.

4. mu-kawas ki apuan, tumala siana.
   (We should) listen to the instructions of the elderly.

5. uhuni dali ka, nita, nita iu razKm.
   現今 日 咱的 咱的 和 新年
   Today is our New Year's day.

6. isit adaN iu ilas isit xasKp iu dali.
   今天是十一月十五日。
   Today is December 15.

7. abasan suadi ka maa-?isakKp di dini.
elder sibling younger sibling Top Rec-get together Loc here
兄姊 弟妹 相聚在一起 這裡
兄弟姊妹一起在這裡聚會。
Brothers and sisters gather together here.

8. rKtKn a tauka ka laila ki mu-kawas.
     village chief in that way AF-talk
村 頭目 那樣 講
村中的頭目那樣講話了。
The head of the village said so.

9. “uhuni dali ka ma-tarui ru razKm.”
     now day Sta-big New Year's day
現在 日 大 新年
「今天是大新年。」
"Today is the great New Year's day."

10. nahani ki taubarKt maamaalKN ma-gizKm.
     come neighbor young men Sta-strong
來 隔壁 男青年們 強壯
鄰村的強壯青年來了。
The strong young men came from the neighboring villages.

11. nahani mi-talam, mi-talam barKbar.
     come AF-race AF-race flag
來 跑 跑 旗
他們來賽跑奪旗。
They came to race for the flag.

12. "imu, imu maamaalKN ka ma-gizKm dadua.
     you you young men Sta-strong all
你們 你們 男青年們 強 都
你們男青年都很強壯。
"You young men are all strong.

13. taubarKt maamaalKN, nita, kita maamaalKN,
     neighbor young men our our young men
鄰 男青年們 咱 男青年們
鄰村的少年，(跟)咱們村的少年，
The young men from the neighboring village, (and) the young men in our village,

14. ma-gizKm dadua, ma-gizKm dadua.

They are all strong.

They are all strong.
15. laila ka, “uhuni ka ma-zuah di dini.”
in that way now AF-race here
(主持人)那樣說，「現在從這裡走標 (賽跑)。」
(The chief) said, "Now you start racing from here.

16. pikadun dadua ma-gizKm maamaalKN.
set out all Sta-strong young men
全體強壯的少年都出發了。
All the strong young men set out.

17. hauha ki pasakKn. “ima ki m-ula lia?
sure arrive who AF-first Asp
要確定到達終點。「看誰領先了？
Make sure that they reach the terminal. "Who is leading?

18. p<in>a-siatu lubahiN nita nita maamaalKN.
Prf-wear-clothes red our our young men
穿紅衣的是咱們的男青年。
The ones in red are our young men.

19. haiha ki asilu, haiha ki damuri.
seem personal name seem personal name
似乎是 Asilu 和 Damuri (領先)。
It seems to be Asilu and Damuri (who are leading).

20. baabah saw ma-hatan iu hatan.
many people AF-laugh and laugh
許多人笑了又笑。
Many people laughed and laughed.

21. apu, apu p<a>a-duKn, duKn, duKn, duKn, ma-hatan
old woman old woman play-Prg-gong gong gong gong AF-laugh
老婆婆 在敲銅鑼 敲鑼 敲鑼 敲鑼 笑
老婆婆在敲鑼，敲著，敲著，敲著，笑了。

The old woman was playing the gong, the sounds of the gong, and they laughed.
22. baabah saw m-itun lia, ma-hatan iu hatan.
Many people AF-rise Asp AF-laugh and laugh
許多人站著，笑了又笑。
Many people stood up and they laughed and laughed.

23. hauha ka iu naki mu-dudu ma-mKrKk.
sure I AF-talk AF-unable
確定了講話不會
我的話確定只有這些，我不擅言辭。
That's all what I have to say, and I don't know how to say it appropriately.

24. ayan nu ayan, saysay yawira.
everything end
根源每件結束
根源歌到此全部結束。
The song of ayan ends here.
Song 3. raz Km 新年請客 Entertaining Guests during the New Year

The words of this New Year’s song were written by Pan Rung-jang, narrated by Pan Jin-yu, and transcribed and translated by Paul Li in Auran, Puli, June 9, 1998. Recorded on Jan. 6, 1999. Video-taped and recorded on June 3, 2001.

潘榮章作詞，潘金玉念詞，李壬癸記音、翻譯，1998年6月9日於埔里鎮愛蘭里。潘金玉唱，1999年1月6日錄音。2001年6月3日重新錄音和錄影。

Let it be noted that there is a code-switching of Taiwanese (Southern Min) sentences and Pazih sentences in the following. But there is no mixture of languages in the same sentence. Sentences 2-5 and 12-23 are in Taiwanese, while Sentences 1, 6-11, and 24-34 are in Pazih.

請注意這首歌詞有語言轉換的現象，就是台灣閩南語跟巴宰語之間的轉換。每一句都是單純的台語或巴宰語。第2-5, 12-23句都是台語,而第1, 6-11, 24-34句都是巴宰語。

1. ayan nu ayan, ayan ni laita.
   Gen we
   咱們唱根源的歌。
   Let's sing ayan, the song of our origin

2. kamsia siongte ci tua e untian.
   thank God most great benevolence
   感謝上帝至大恩典
   Thank God for His great benevolence.

3. tit tio’ inchua cit ni iu cit ni.
   get lead one year and one year
   得著引領一年又一年
   He leads us year after year.

4. guan tann singsit kamsia cu tua-un.
   we now honest thank God great benevolence
   阮今誠實感謝主大恩
阮今誠實感謝主大恩。
*We are really grateful to God's benevolence.*
5. hə guan thiann cu na tua iu na chim.
   let us love God more big and more deep
   乎阮疼主愈大又愈深
   We love God even more and deeper.

6. dali iu uhuni ka, ma-taru iu dali.
   day now Sta-big day
   日現在大日子
   Today is a great day.

7. abasan u suadi maa-ʔisa-ʔisakup.
   elder sibling and younger sibling Rec-Red-get together
   兄姊和弟妹一起
   Brothers and sisters are gathering together.

8. hauha ka isia, laila ka imisu.
   sure then in that way that
   確定那時那樣那
   確定是在那個時候。
   It is certain that it is at that time.

9. mu-kawas ki apuan, riak ki kaakawas.
   AF-talk Nom elder people good Nom word
   講,說前輩好話
   Elderly people say only nice words.

10. mu-tudu ki apuan, tumala ka siana.
    AF-instruct Nom elderly people listen Conj obey
    教誨前輩聽且遵從
    When elderly people give instructions, we should listen.

11. uhuni u dali ka raa-razaw iu razKm.
    now day Red-celebrate New Year
今天正在過新年。
Today we are celebrating the New Year's day.
12. guan tann taiki chut siann lai gimsi.
we now all speak out come recite poetry
阮今大家出聲來吟詩
現在咱們大家出聲來吟詩。
*Now let's all chant and recite poetry.*

13. kamsia siont chua guan kue sinni.
thank God lead us celebrate New Year
感謝上帝帶阮過新年
感謝上帝, 帶領咱們過新年。
*Thank God for leading us to celebrate the New Year.*

14. sekan zit-ci na cui it-lit lau.
world day like water keep flow
世間日子若水一直流
人世間過日子像水一般地流個不停。
*The days pass by just like the flowing of water.*

15. guan tio hiong cing kin kiann bo yanti.
we must toward front haste walk without delay
阮著向前緊行無延遲
咱們要一直向前走，不延遲。
*We have to move forward without hesitation.*

16. sinchun banmi khi ku long wann sin.
New Year everything throw away old all change new
新春萬物去舊換新
過年萬物除舊佈新。
*During the New Year all the old change to the new.*

17. kiu cu ya wann guan sim ciann cue sin.
ask God also change our mind become as new
求主也換阮心成作新
祈求上帝也將咱們的心情換新。
*Ask God to change the state of our mind also and renovate it.*

18. cit tai kue liau cit tai iu cai lai.
one generation after Asp one generation and again come

一代過了，另一代又來了。
Generation after generation.
19. citbakni ku ciann cue lau tua lang.
   blink long become as old big person
   眨眼之間，人已變老了。
   People get old in just a blinking of the eyes.

20. guan e zitci zu cinn zu cui lau.
    our Gen day like arrow like water flow
    阮的 子 如 箭 如 水 流
    咱們的光陰似箭如流水。
    Our time passes by like an arrow and water flowing.

    day day devote effort rely God strong faith
    日 日 致 意 靠 主 堅固 信
    每天致意，依靠主有信心。
    We devote our efforts everyday, rely on God, and have faith in God.

22. guan kiann tinn lo kin kiann bu yanti.
    we walk heaven road haste walk without delay
    阮 行 天 路 緊 行 無 延遲
    咱們走天路，快走不延遲。
    We walk to the heaven in a haste without delay.

23. hiong cing phau cau ttit kau cu sin pinn.
    toward front run walk till arrive God body side
    向 前 跑 走 直到 主 身 邊
    向前直行，到主身邊。
    Run forward all the way until we get close to God's side.

24. ita, ita dadua maa-?isakKp di dini.
    we we all get-together Loc here
    咱 咱 大家 一起 此地
    咱們大家聚在這裡。
    We are all gathering together here.

25. kaidi taukua ni xuma, paka-tahayak taukua.
    here chief Gen home Caus-weary chief
在此地 頭目的家 感謝 頭目
在頭目的家，感謝頭目。

Here at the chief's house, and thanks to the chief.
26. taukua iu apuan ka, ma-hatan mu-kawas.
Chief and old woman Top AF-laugh AF-talk
頭目和老太婆笑說
The chief and his old wife said smilingly,
27. “uhuni iu dali ka, nita, nita iu razKm.”
now day Top we we New Year
「今天是咱們的新年。」
"Today is our New Year's day."
AF-talk Nom old woman none what Sta-embarassed
說老太婆沒什麼不好意思
The old woman said, “We have little to entertain the guests. We are embarrassed.
29. nahada iu dadua p<a>uzah di binayu.
exist all Prg-come mountain
有都來山
There are various dishes from the mountains.
30. nahada ki saysay p<a>uzah ni iu raxuN.
exist all sorts of things Prg-come Gen stream
有各色來溪
The other dishes are from the streams.
31. ma-NazKp ki saysay b<in>axa ni iu babaw.”
Sta-leftover all sorts of things Prf-give Gen God
各種東西都有剩餘，是上天所賜的。
There is more than enough in each dish, as bestowed by God.”
32. uhuni dali ka, paka-tahayak taukua.
now day Caus-weary chief
現在 日 感謝 頭目
今天謝謝頭目。
*Let’s thank the chief today.*
Pazih Texts and Songs

33. hauha ka iu naki mu-dudu ma-mKrKk.
    sure my AF-talk AF-unable

    我的話確定只有這些，我不擅言辭。
    That's all I have to say, and I don't know how to say it appropriately.

34. ayan nu ayan, saysay yawira.
    everything end

    根源歌到此全部結束。
    The song of ayan ends here.
Song 4. New House Inauguration  

The words for the inauguration of a new house were written by Pan Jin-yu, with ayan melody, on Oct. 5, 1995, transcribed and translated by Paul Li.

Celebrating the new house inauguration, the song was written by Pan Jin-yu on October 5, 1995, using the ayan melody, and transcribed and translated by Paul Li.

1. ayan nu ayan ayan nu laita. ayan nu ayan ayan nu laita. our our根源 根源 根源 咱們 根源 根源 根源 咱們根源，咱們唱根源。根源，咱們唱根源。Let's sing ayan, the song of our origin. Let's sing ayan, the song of our origin

2. hauha ka imisu dali u uhuni. sure he day now確定 他 今 他說確定在今天。He was certain that it was today.

3. laila ka isia laila ka mu-dudu. in that way then in that way AF-talk那樣 那時 那樣 講那時講的就是那樣。That was what he said.

4. makahatan u hatan abasan u suazi. happy laugh elder sibling and younger sibling兄弟姊妹都很高興，也都笑了。Brothers and sisters were all happy and laughed.

5. maa-?isa-u-?isakup imu ita dadua. Rec-Red-get together you we all在一起 你們 咱 全體你們、我們咱們全體在一起。You and we are gathering together.

6. laila ka isia mu-dudu ka iu rahan. in that way then AF-talk and word
7. p<a>uzah u apuan rutud-aw iu nita.
Prg-come elder people pass down-PF we
來自 長輩 傳承,繼承 咱
長輩傳下來的咱們要繼承。
We should inherit the traditions passed down by the older generation.

8. ana u paxazN apuan nu iu rahan.
don't Caus-miss elder people word
別 丟失 長輩 話
長輩的話別丟失了。
Don't miss their words.

9. laila ka mu-tudu laila ka mu-kawas.
in that way AF-instruction in that way AF-talk
那樣 教訓 那樣 講,說
教訓我們的話就是那樣。
That's their instruction.

10. hauha ka imisu laila ka isia.
sure that in that way then
確定 那個 那樣 那時
確定是在那個時候。
It is certain that it was at that time.

11. uhuni iu dali ka ma-taru iu dali.
now day Sta-big, good day
今日 大,好 日
今天是吉日。
Today is a great day.

12. ita ka mu-sumat tumala mu-sumat.
we Top AF-pray listen AF-prayer
咱 信主,祈禱 聽 祈禱,禱告
咱們信基督的人禱告，也相信(聽信)禱告。
We Christians pray and listen to prayers.
13. abababaw laila ka mu-rapun yami lai.

上帝就保護,照顧我們了。

God protects, takes care of us. 

God takes care of us.
14. yami μu-sumerat ka mu-ba-xa riak xumak.
   AF-pray AF-give good house
   我們 祈禱 賞賜 好 房屋
   我們祈禱，上帝就賞賜好房子（給我們）。
   When we pray, God will give us a good house.

15. laila ka isia riak a pa-lalKN-an.
   in that way that good PA-live-LF
   那樣 那 好 住
   那就好居住。
   It is comfortable to live in.

16. dali iu dali ka raa-rapun dadua.
   day day Red-protect, take care all
   日 日 保護,照顧 全體
   天天保護大家。
   God takes care of us everyday.

17. nahada dadua b<in>axa di babaw.
   exist all benevolence God
   有 全部 賞賜 上天
   什麼都有，都是上天賞賜的。
   We have all that we need, as given by God.

18. ana paxarihan abababaw b<in>axa.
   don't forget God benevolence
   別 忘記 上帝 賞賜
   別忘記上帝的賞賜。
   Don't you forget about the benevolence of God.

19. hauha ka iu naki mu-dudu ma-mKrKk.
   sure my AF-talk AF-unable
   確定 我的 講話 不會
   我的話確定只有這些，我不擅言辭。
   That's all what I have to say, and I don't know how to say it appropriately.

20. ayan nu ayan saysay yawira.
   everything end
唉焉到此全部結束。

The song of ayan ends here.
Pazih Texts and Songs

C. Kaxabu Songs 四庄歌謠

Song 1. 四庄的傳統生活 Kaxabu Traditional Life

Sung and interpreted by Pan Ying-jiau (female, 75) at Niumian, Puli, on June 3, 2001.
Recorded, transcribed and translated by Paul Li, video-taped by Jian Shih-lang and Lu Yi-jun
潘英嬌 (女，75歲) 唱及解說 (2001.6.3)
李壬癸錄音、記詞及翻譯，簡史朗、呂憶君錄影，地點：埔里鎮牛眠里

We live here in the past

before we AF-live here

We live here in the past

planting rice and sweet potatoes

planting beans and peanuts

planting water convolulus and lettuce.

(We) went to the mountains to catch deer

(We) went to the mountains to catch deer

(We) went to the streams to catch fish

(We) went to the streams to catch fish

308
atapi, buzing, alaw-siaw.

loach goby fish name fish name

石貼仔 苦甘仔 石斑魚

石貼仔，苦甘仔，石斑

all kinds of fishes

kuzung iu tarituk.

shrimp and spiral shell

蝦 和 螺絲

蝦和螺絲

shrimps and spiral shells.
Song 2. 饮酒歌 Let's Drink

Sung and interpreted by Pan Hsiu-mei (female), Puli, Jan. 21, 1988
Transcribed and translated by Paul Li
潘秀梅 (1988.1.21) 唱
李壬癸記音、翻譯

1. ta-daux-i\(^1\) ?inusat, ?ita, ?ita dadua?.
   let's-drink-imp wine we we all
  咱們喝 酒 咱 咱 全體
  咱們喝酒吧！咱們大家。
   *Let's drink, all of us!*

2. ?ita, ?ita dadua?, ?abasan suazi?\(^2\).
   we we all elder siblings younger siblings
  咱 咱 全體 兄姊 弟妹
  咱們大家，兄弟姊妹們。
   *All of us, brothers and sisters.*

---

\(^1\) ta daux-i'咱們喝吧！', mu-daux'喝 (主事焦點)' , daux-i'喝 (受事焦點，命令式)' .

\(^2\) ?abasan'兄姊', suazi'弟妹', 南島語一般只依年齡而分，不分性別。巴宰語另有 mamah
‘兄’, ?iah'姊', 姨', ?atan'嫂', minu'弟媳'等同輩親屬稱謂。
Song 3. 祭祖歌 ayan 祭祖歌 ayan 祭祖歌 ayan

The words of both ritual songs of ayan in Kaxabu were written by Pan Jun-nai (male, 83), sung by Pan Hsiu-mei on Jan.21, 1988 and by Pan Ying-jiau on June 3, 2001, and transcribed and translated by Paul Li.

以下這兩首祭祖歌都是潘郡乃（男，83歲）作詞，潘秀梅 (1988.1.21)、潘英嬌 (2001.6.3) 主唱，李壬癸記音、翻譯。

起首 The beginning:

Let's sing the ritual song of our origin.

ta-tudu?³ apuᵃ a nuki⁵ ?uhuza?.

Let's talk about ancient ancestors.

It is said he was named Abuk.

除了曲首的序段和曲尾的尾聲外，有五段。

2 ?ayan 或作?aiyan‘根源，起源’是曲名。

3 ta-dudu?-i‘咱們說吧！’< dudu-, d-a-duu?-ay’將要說’。

4 ?apu‘祖母，老（人）’。

5 nuki 可能是 nu 與 ki 的組合。

6 p-in-ialay < pialay‘起首’。
Pazih Texts and Songs

he Nom Prf-start
他 起首
起首的是他。
He was the beginner.

1. "?inai, ?abai, mausay na yaku?.
mother father leave I
媽 爸 離去 我
「爸爸,媽媽，我要走了。」
“Dad, Mom, I'm leaving,” he said.

m-asu? lawin ?iU buzux.
AF-bring bow and arrow
帶 弓和 箭
(他)帶著弓箭。
He took a bow and arrows with him.

mausay dKKhKn binayu?.
go dark mountain
去 險暗 山
到深山去。
He was going to the dark (interior) mountains.

2. pikadun kaxu kawazawat daan.
set out arrive half road
起程 到 半路
走到半路。
He set out and went half of his way.

m-idahin lia7 ki ?abuk.
AF-afraid Asp name
怕 了 人名
阿木害怕了。
Abuk was afraid.

7 lia 完成貌。
He was afraid of being bitten by wild animals.

ma-NKsKn humhum mu-Nazip.
Sta-afraid animal AF-bite
怕 猛獸 咬
怕被猛獸咬。

He was afraid of being bitten by wild animals.
ma-izux m-ukusa bayu? ?awas.
AF-go down AF-go side sea
下山 去 邊 海
下山到海邊。
So he went to the beach.

3. yayi-yayix lia ?isia?.
check Asp he
查看 了 他
他仔細查看了。
He looked around carefully.

mi-kita ?apu laulu? m<a>aru-batu?§.
AF-see old turtle Prg-lay-egg
看 老 龜 在生蛋
看見一隻大龜正在生蛋。
He saw a mother turtle laying eggs.

ma-hata-hatan lia ki ?abuk.
Sta-Red-happy Asp name
很高興 了 人名
阿木很高興。
Abuk was very happy.

mK-dKkKn batu? laulu?.
AF-pick egg turtle
揀 蛋 龜
(他)揀龜蛋。
He was picking up turtle eggs.

not yet lay-egg one

§ m<a>alu-batu?’正在生蛋’< batu?’蛋’。
§§ a, ya, wa‘連結詞’，(描寫菲律賓語通稱為 ligature )，這三種形式出現的語境不同，
因此它們是同位語。此句 ya 似當‘主語標記’而非‘連結詞’。
還沒 生蛋 一個

有一個蛋還沒生下來。

One egg was not laid yet.

AF-reach out hand AF-take out

伸 手 掏
( 他 ) 伸手去掏。

He raised his hand to take out the egg.

hapit lia laulu?, mK-kKmKt10 ?aalKp.
frightened Asp turtle AF-shrink door

膽 了 龜 收縮 門

海龜嚇了一跳, 閉起陰戶。

The turtle was frightened and shrank its vagina.

mu-baza? dali11 lia ki ?abuk.
AF-know day Asp name

阿木醒了過來。

Abuk came back to himself.

at shore sea none person

在邊海 沒有 人

在海邊, 四下無人。

There was nobody at the seashore.

mi-kita? kai-bayu? kKNKt13 hapuy.
AF-see at shore half-burnt firewood fire

看 在 海邊 餘燼 火

10 mK-kKmKt'收縮 (主事焦點)'，kKmKd-Kn'（受事焦點）'。這段敘述阿木的手被挾住在大龜的陰戶裡，人隨著大龜飄洋過海。

11 m(a)-baza dali ‘知道一天’，意思是指‘清醒過來’的時候。

12 saw-saw‘眾多的人’< saw‘人’
在海邊 (他) 看見火的餘燼。
He saw a half-burned firewood fire at the beach.
溯溪而上仔細找人。
He traced back the stream to look for people.

看煙開心
看見炊煙，(他)心就開朗了。
When he saw smoke, his mind opened (he felt greatly relieved).

尾聲 The end:
咱們唱根源的歌，到此全部結束。
This is the ritual song of our origin. Everything was like that.
Song 4. 祭祖歌 ayan 2 Ritual Song for Ancestors 2—Christianization

1. ?ayan nu ?ayan, ?ayan nu laita?.
   we
   咱們唱根源的歌。
   Let's sing the ritual song of our origin.

   ta-dudu?-i ?apu a nuki ?uhuza?.
   let's-talk-Imp ancestor ancient
   咱們談從前的祖先。
   Let's talk about our ancestors.

   kapaus ki laNat, ?isia? ki m-in-ul'a?.
   name name he AF-Prf-lead
   他的名字叫加保斯,由他起源。
   His name is Kapaus, who was the first (to adopt Christianity).

   mu-lutut2 musumat3 maa-ia k a ta-tudu?.
   AF-get AF-observe good Lig Ca-instruction
   得以敬奉良好的教訓。
   (We Kaxabu people) got good instructions.

   not grudge name AF-come AF-spread
   加保斯並不吝惜，而來傳播。

---

1 m-in-ul'a起源'< mula
2 mu-lutut'得到', lu-lutud-ay'將會得到'< lutud-。
3 mu-sumat'敬奉(主事焦點)', sumad-en(受事焦點)< sumad-。
4 m-tukut'播種，傳播'< tukut。t-in-ukut lia'已播種了'。
Kapaus spared no effort in spreading the Gospels.
Pazih Texts and Songs

hauyayakKn lia ?ita? mu-kalawa? iu lama\(^5\).
fortunate Asp we AF-receive luck
咱們幸運地承受了福氣。

We are fortunate to receive God's blessing.

tanip-Kn\(^6\) samian a ?aba? ?ita? ka dadua?.
save-PF God father we all
咱們大家受到上帝的恩典。
We are all bestowed on.

\(?\text{ini} \text{ samian} \text{ mu-}\text{tanip} , \text{ ?}\text{alasay} \text{ mu-}\text{suax}\(^7\).
not God save almost throw away
不神拯救差一點丟棄
若不是神拯救，咱們差一點被遺棄。
We were almost abandoned without God.

3. lama-lama? \(\text{yu}\(^8\) \text{ nita}\(^9\) \text{ haki} \text{ maa-sKkKla}\(^?\).
Red-luck we so Rec-meet
咱們很幸運才能遇見（上帝）。
We are lucky so that we have come across God.

\(?\text{azang} \text{ a hatKn a kawas} \text{ sapan-Kn iu nita}\(^{10}\).
one hundred year receive-PF we

---

\(^5\) mu-kalawa? yu lama? 承受福氣，yu 是賓格標記，lama?‘福氣’其重疊形式為 lama-lama?‘很多福氣’，比較下文第三段第一句。

\(^6\) tanip-Kn'庇蔭，拯救（受事焦點）'，mu-tanip'拯救（主事焦點）'，見下句。

\(^7\) mu-suax'丟棄，遺棄（主事焦點）'，suax-en'（受事焦點）'。

\(^8\) yu 語法功能不明。

\(^9\) ni-ta'咱們的（屬格）'。

\(^{10}\) 這句是受事焦點的句型，主題是？azaN a hatKn a kawas，謂語是 sapan-Kn iu ni-ta。
咱們迎接了一百週年。
We celebrate the 100th anniversary.

day month at place name at Ins-pray-Loc

咱們每日每月都在牛眠山上教堂。
We go to church every day and month in Baisia.

Caus-PA-transmit we till how many thousand

咱們要傳承數千年。
We want to transmit (Christianity) for hundreds of years.

ʔayan nu ʔayan laita, saysay laila?.
we everything in that way

咱們唱根源的歌，一切都是那樣。
This is the ritual song of our origin. Everything goes that way.

¹¹ pa-pa-luzuax‘使傳承’< luzuax；ma-luzuax（主事焦點），luzuax-Kn（受事焦點）；pa‘使役'。
Pazih Texts and Songs

Song 5. 祭祖歌 Ayan 3 父子對唱 Dialogue between Father and Son

This ritual song of ayan was sung and interpreted by Lin A-shuang (female, 88) in Niumian, Puli, on Jan.15, 1988 and again on Sept.3, 1998 at the age of 98, transcribed and translated by Paul Li. She said she learned it when she was in her 30s.

林阿雙唱及解說 (1988.1.15), 李壬癸錄音、記詞及翻譯

地點：埔里鎮牛眠里


根源 根源 根源 根源
咱們唱根源的歌。
Let's sing the ritual song of our origin.

you all elder elder younger stay here
你們 全部 兄姊 兄姊 弟妹 在這裡
ma-hata-hatan.
AF-Red-happy
高興
你們兄弟姊妹們在裡都很高興。
You brothers and sisters are happy here.

come-imp come ? let's-drink-imp wine
來 來 咱們喝 酒
來！來！咱們喝酒吧！
Come! Come! Let's drink!

Dad elder younger stay here AF-Red-happy
父 兄姊 弟妹 在此 快樂
爸爸，兄弟姊妹們在裡都很快樂。
Father, brothers and sisters are happy here.

5. ka ?alu?-i ka ta-daux-i ?inusat.
come-imp let's-drink-imp wine
Come! Let's drink!
   Dad will go Asp l Sta-big village AF-make money

   父 要走了 我 大 部落 嫳 錢
   Dad, I'm going to a city to make money.

   have money come AF-give you Dad

   有 錢 就會拿回來給你 爸爸。
   When I come with some money, I'll return and give it to you, Dad.

8. ?ana maxakKkKl a yaku?.
   don't miss me

   別 想念 我
   Don't miss me!

9. ?isiw ka yak, dusa rakihan mamalKKn.
   you fine two child male

   你 好 兩 孩 男
   You are fine with two sons.

10. ka ?ana maxakKkKl a yaku?.
    don't miss me

    別 想念 我
    Don't miss me!

11. naki a ?ina ka ?ini mi-kita yaku ka kuah rKsKk.
    my mother not AF-look at me not with respect

    我的 母親 不 看 我 沒 看得起
    My [step] mother looks down upon me.

12. ka sasay-Kn ma-lalKKn ka xuma? i ka ?aba? i?
我怎麼還能住家裡呢，爸爸？
*How can I stay at home, Dad?*
Pazih Texts and Songs

13. ka mausay ?ada rKtKn.
    will go other village
    要去別部落
    我要到別的部落去。
    I'm going to another village.

    come AF-give you Dad
    (賺錢)回來給你，爸爸。
    I'll come back to give you (some money).

15. mausay disiw dapidapi?.
    will go there cliffs
    要去那裡懸崖
    到懸崖那裡。
    I'm going to the cliffs there.

    have water eat fine Asp
    有水吃好了
    有水可以喝就好了。
    If there is water to drink, that will be fine.

17. ka ?aba?, ?ana maxakKkKla ka yaku iN.
    Dad don't miss me Asp
    爸爸別想念我
    Dad, don't miss me!

18. ?isiw ka yak dusa? ka ra-rakihan ka mamalK N."
    you good two Red-child male
    你好在還有兩個孩子！
    You (still) have two sons."

父唱 The father sings:
「兒子，你真的要走了嗎？
"Are you really leaving, son?"

20. ka ?ini maxakKkKla ?aba??
not miss Dad
不想念 爸
(你)不想念爸爸嗎？
Don't you miss Dad?

son I Top bad
孩子 我 不好
兒子，是我不好。
It's my fault, son.

don't AF-marry your mother not Sta-like that son
若非 娶 你的 母親 不 如此 孩子
我若沒娶你繼母，孩子，就不會這樣了。」
If I had not married your (step) mother, it wouldn't have been like that, son."
Appendix 1. Three Ritual Songs of Ayan Recorded by the Japanese 野村氏所採

The following three ritual songs of ayan were earlier recorded by some Japanese (perhaps Nomura) and found in Ogawa's files. The words of the songs were translated into classical Japanese and annotated by Ogawa or Ino. These songs were published with translation in Japanese by Sato (1934). The original manuscripts by Nomura were then interpreted by Pan Jin-yu on September 1-2, 2002, edited and translated into Chinese and English by Paul Li. Notice that the song in B1 (pp.176-79) is nearly the same as the second song below, and that the first and third songs have not been recorded ever since. Compare the first song below with D Text 2 recorded by Asai.

一、大水氾濫之歌 The Song of the Great Flood

1. ai-yan nu ai-yan dau-doai lai-tah.
   ayan nu ayan d<a>udu?’ay laita
   根源 根源 講故事 咱們
   在祭歌中咱們要講咱們的根源。
   In the song of ayan, we shall talk about (our origin).

2. tap-ba-nan nu mat-taro sap-bung nya kai-sih
   tabanan u ma-taru sabuN a kaisi
   male name Obi Sta-big female name surname
   長者（人名，長者之妹）。
   The elder Tabanan and (his sister) SabuN a Kaisi.

3. ma-hah ki kid deh-haih tupp du a lal-liuh
   maxa kii-kidih-ay tipuzu a rariw.
   then Red-go down-Fut top mountain name
   則要落來，高峰（山名）
   從山峰下來。
   They were going down from the top of Mount Rariw.
4. mahah ma sak ku laih di nguji ngut da bokgijih
   maxa maa-sakKI-ay di NuziNud-a bugizi.
   then arrive-Fut tip place name

然後 到達 尾端 地名

是以要到在山尾（地名）。
快要到達 Bugizi 山尾。

They were arriving at the tip of Mount Bugizi.

5. ma-hah-pau sungut daih su-ngut du ma bi da-bit
   maxa pʰ<e>-u-suNud-ay suNud- u ma-bidabit
   then Prg-build-bridge-Fut bridge AF-wobble

然後 要舖橋 橋 搖晃

則將造橋，橋曰美好。
那時正要舖橋，而橋搖晃。

They were constructing a bridge, but the bridge wobbled.

6. di ma rabahan rahong ini lau isiah, tabanan mataro sabong nga
   Loc south river good then name Sta-big name

南 溪 好 那時 人名 大

kaisih.
kaisi surname

父名

在溪南，敢是伊長者，（人名）（沙望皆是）。

到溪南長者 Tabanan 和 SabuN a Kaisi 之處。

To the south of the river were the elder Tabanan and SabuN a Kaisi.

7. mahah tau malaai hommau a tutut
   maxa tʰ<e>-umala?-ay humaw a tutut.
   then Prg-hear-Fut bird name sound

那時 聽 鳥名 聲音

則聽得鳥之聲。

正聽到鳥鳴聲。

Then they heard of the sound of a bird called humaw.
8. at-da maha roaro, tabanan mataro
ana maxaruaru, tabanan ma-taru.
don't sad name Sta-big
別 傷心 男名 大
又有悶心 長者。
Tabanan，別傷心！
Don't be sad, Elder Tabanan.

9. kah mahah ma sakkul-lai mau-jut-a kat-jau-wan.
ka maxa ma-sakKl-ay mazKd-a kazauwan.
then AF-arrive-Fut narrow name
然後 將到
則要到山腰 
地 。
快要到Kazawan山腰了。
(They) were arriving at the narrow passage of Mount Kazauwan.

10. mahah masakul-lai di bun-nu-bun-na tau-man
maxa ma-sakKl-ay di bunubun a tauman.
AF-arrive-Fut mountain name
將到 山股 山名
則能到山股 
。
快要到Tauman山股。
(They) were arriving at half way up Mount Tauman.

11. mit-da-lun di ribunan
midalum di ribunan.
get water place name
取水？地名
擔水在 
。
在Ribunan提水。
(They) got water at Ribunan.

12. mahah kikitta-ai ap-boah likkah yu i ub-bach a lik-kah
maxa kii-kita?-ay abua lika iu uba lika.
then Red-see-Fut female name name and female name name
然後 看 女名 和 女名
所以見得 — (阿抹利甲) 與 — (烏肉利甲)。
然後要見 Abua Lika 和 Uba Lika。
Then they were to see Abua Lika and Uba Lika.
13. ya sia kau-sah a-ba-san-na soa-jih
   yasia kausa abasan a suazi.
   they two elder younger

   他們二人姊妹。
   她們兩人是姊妹。
   *Those two were sisters.*

14. mahah ma kakau wasai, rahallu hauliah
   maxa maaka-kawas-ay rahal u haw lia.
   then Rec-speak-Fut word good Asp

   則說出好言語。
   然後她們互相說好話。
   *Then they were saying nice words to each other.*

15. atda mahah roaro tabanna mataro
   ana maxaruaru, tabanna ma-taru.
   don't sad name Sta-big

   別傷心人名大
   別傷心, Tabanan長者！
   *Don't be sad, Elder Tabanan.*

16. i-ni lau is siya, tabanna ma-ta-ro
   iniraw isia tabanan ma-taru
       that name Sta-big

   敢是此人乃是長者。
   那是 Tabanan長者。
   *That is the elder Tabanan (?)*

17. kah ma-hah pau sung-ngut-dai, di mia mi-san nu ra-hong
    ka maxa p<a>u-suNud-ay di mia amisan u raxuN
    then Prg-build-bridge-Fut there north Obl river

    則由此要造橋在西北勢。

350
Then they were to construct a bridge to the north of the river.
   bridge AF-wobble
   橋 搖晃
   橋曰美章。
   橋搖晃。
   *The bridge wobbled.*

19. ma-hah ma-sa-kul-lai di bai-yu au-was.
   then arrive-Fut side sea
   然後 到 水邊 海
   則能到於海邊
   他們到達海邊。
   *Then they were arriving at the seaside.*

20. kah mahah ki-kit-ta'ai, ai-yam-mu pa-sukkuwan lak-gu lak-gu dar-ru-pit
   ka maxa kii-kita'-ay ayam u paasukan lagulagu darupit.
   then Red-see-Fut bird story small bird sp.
   然後 看 鳥 故事 小 鳥名
   所以見得鳥的古事，細細隻鳥(雀 小 鳥)。
   然後他們要看 darupit 鳥講故事。
   *Then they were to see the bird called darupit telling a story.*

21. dar-ri bap-bu bap-bu-kah, bu bun-nat au-was
   day Red-scratch sand ocean
   日 抓 沙 海
   鳥以足爪爬沙乃是海沙。
   有一天鳥在扒海沙。
   *On a certain day (the bird) kept scratching the sea sand.*

22. ma-hah u ki-kit-ta'ai, kin-nu-hoh rik-ki-bul
   then Red-see-Fut barn
   然後 看 做的 檔倉
   所以見得栗倉。
然後他們看到穀倉。
Then they were to see an erected(?) barn.
maxa kii-kita?-ay piuxn manhis.
then Red-see-Fut millet

然後 看 小米
所以見得黍。
看到小米。
Then they were to see millet.

24. i-ni lau is-sia, tap-ban-nu mat-taro.
iniraw isia tabanan ma-taru.
that name Sta-big

敢是此個 男名 大
那就是長者 Tabanan。
That is the elder Tabanan.

maxa u ma-tu-xumak-ay, xumak paril.
then AF-build-house-Fut house kitchen

然後 蓋房子 房子 廚房
則要築室、厝與廚房。
然後要蓋房子和廚房。
Then they were to build a house and kitchen.

26. ma-hah na hat-da-ai, pia-hun ma-ri-his di rub-ri-rub-ru a kau-was
maxa nahada?-ay piuxn marihis di ruburubu kawas.
then have-Fut millet ? below sky

然後 有 小米 下 天
由是則有黍在地下。
於是地上他們有小米。
Then they would have millet (on earth) under the sky.

27. as-su un nu uhuni, au-bil-la bat-doach
asu?-un nu uhuni, aubil a bazuaah.
bring-PF now later generation

帶 現在 後 同一代的人
則傳至後世。
代代相傳。

It was passed down to the next generation.
全體意譯（黃秀敏譯）：

我現在在此講述故事。有名叫 Tabanan 的長者和其妹 SabuN a Kaisi。從高峰下來，來到山尾稱為 Bugizi 的地方，在那裡造橋，命名為美好。在溪南，兩人又聽到鳥叫而悲喜交集。於是去到山腰稱為 Kazauwan 的地方，而且又到山股稱為 Tauman 的地方。其後因擔水在 Ribunan 的地方，會見 Abua Lika 和 Uba Lika，這一對姊妹，彼此交談，不禁歡喜。在此意想不到的地方遇到別人，而又悲從中來。長者又在溪北造橋，命名為美章。可以將常到海邊，在此看到小鳥扒海沙，那裡面有小米倉，同時也看到有黍，於是在此建築房屋，設置房間，並在下面儲存黍，從此以後，黍便在地下，傳至後世。而且故事便如此傳述下來。
二、泛濫後人民分居之歌  The Song of Living Separately after the Flood

1. aiyau nu aiyau, ta du dwau manoh.
   Let's-talk far

   (起唱之語)，請論古事。

   咱們談到根源，那是很久遠以前。

   In the song of ayan, we shall talk about far back in the past.

2. dauduwai liahah, ubach-pini adapini.
   duduw-ai lia ha, uba pini, ada pini.
   Prg-talk-Fut Asp female name surname female name surname

   要論之也，鳥肉比耳阿踏比耳。

   要論 Uba Pini 和 Ada Pini 兩姊妹。

   We shall trace back to (two sisters), Uba Pini and Ada Pini.

3. paitul rahong, abasan soadi.
   paitul raxuN abasan suadi.
   Prg-go up river elder younger

   往上 溪 姊 妹

   姊妹溯溪而上。

   The sisters were going up the river.

4. maha makitai, tap-banan mataro
   maxa maa-kita?:ay tabanan ma-taru.
   then Rec-meet-Fut name Sta-big

   然後 將相見 男名 大

   然後要和長輩 Tabanan 相見。

   Then they would meet with the elder Tabanan.

5. maha makauwasai, mausai paimoh
   maxa maa-kawas-ay, "mausay pai mu?"  
   then Rec-talk-Fut will go Q you
然後 交談 去 你們
故相問情(?)從何去乎？
他們交談。（他問，）「你們要到哪裡去？」
Then they were to talk to each other. He asked, “Where will you go?”
6. lahái tap-banna mataro, mahah makauwasai.
lahay tabanän ma-taru maxa m<a>a-kawas-ay.
name Sta-big then AF-Prg-tell-Fut

男名 大 然後 交談

長者如此問，固有說曰。
Tabanan 長者問了，所以他們要回答。
The elder asked them, so they were to reply.

7. abasan soadi, mausai haiyamih
abasan suadi, ‘mausay haiyami.
elder sister youner sister will go we
姊 妹 去 我們

兄第二人，我等要往我所
姊妹兩人說，「我們要去…
The sisters said, "We shall go…

8. mausai mahapajech, pajech u sik-ki daiya.
mausay maxa-pazih, pazih u si ki daya.”
will go become-Pazih Pazih Nom east, above
去 變成巴宰 巴宰 東,上方

乃是要為蕃人，蕃乃是東蕃也。
(我們)要去東方當巴宰人。」
(We) shall go to the east to become Pazih people.”

9. tatung ngap-ban nu lij-jach.
tK-tK Nab-an u rizax.
Red-rise-Loc Obl sun

出來,上升 的 太陽

在日出之所也。
就是日出的地方。
It is where the sun rises.

10. manau amisan, manau rapbahan.
manaw amisan, manaw rabaxan.
toward north toward south
向 北 向 南

向北向南。
向北再向南。
*Toward the north, and then toward the south.*
11. haudauduwai, tatu maumauwan tau maumauwan.
   haw d<ay>uduw-ay tatu maumauwan tau maumauwan.
   Prg-talk-Fut male name male name

   再論甲乙二人。
   他們要說 Tatu Maumauwan 和 Tau Maumauwan 的故事。
   They were to talk about Tatu Maumauwan and Tau Maumauwan.

12. maha masik-kulaih tap-banna mataro.
   maxa masi-kKla tabanan ma-taru.
   then move-meet name Sta-big

   則相遇長者之所。
   然後他們要去見長輩 Tabanan。
   Then they would meet with the elder Tabanan.

13. mahah pabaruddai, rahal-lu hauliak.
   maxa pabarKd-ay rahal u hau-riak.
   then reply-Fut word very fine

   則有答好言語。
   然後他們會互相問好。
   Then they would say "Very fine" to each other.

14. mausai haiyami, mahadahah, dahoh saraumoh.
   "mausay haiyami maxa-daxK daxu saraumaw.
   will go we become-savage savage place name

   去 我等要去我所，乃是為生蕃，是生蕃沙漏毛 (—蕃號也)。
   「我們要到 Saraumaw (今梨山？) 那地方去變生番。
   "We shall go and become savages like those living in Saraumaw.

15. ada mahah roaro, tap-banna mat-taro.
   ana maxa-ruaru, tabanan ma-taru.”
   don't produce-tears name Sta-big

   閒得憂問者乃是長者。
別傷心，Tabanan 長輩。」
Don't be sad, elder Tabanan."
16. inilau issia, mahah pau sug-ngut-dai.
iniraw isia maxa p<s/u>Nud-ay.
there then Prg-build-bridge-Fut
那裡 然後 要鋪橋
敢是如此則要造橋。
在那裡似乎正要鋪橋。
Then they were constructing a bridge.

17. sug-ngut du ma bit-da-bit, i tat-tu maumauwan.
suNud-u ma-bidabit i tatu maumauwan.
bridge AF-wobble male name
橋 搖晃 男名
橋號乃是。
Tatu Maumauwan 在橋上搖晃。
Tatu Maumauwan was staggering on the bridge.

18. taumaumauwan, pis-su lik-khit di sug-ngut.
tau maumauwan pisurixit di suNut.
male name slip off Loc bridge
男名 滑下去在橋
投茅茅灣滑落於橋下。
Tau Maumauwan 在橋上滑下去了。
Tatu Maumauwan slipped off from the bridge.

19. alulaisiah, tattu maumauwan.
"alu" lai sia tatu maumauwan.
come Asp he male name
來他男名
喚其上來者乃是人名
Tatu Maumauwan 叫他道，「上來吧！」
Tatu Maumauwan said, "Come on!"

20. us-sa laisu, mausaih-yakah
"usa lai siw. mausay yaku
go Asp you will go I
去了你去我
答曰：汝自回去，我要去。
（ Tau Maumauwan 答說，）「你先去。我也要離去了。
"You go ahead. I'm leaving"
21. mahah luk-khut, luk-khut-ku noang.
maxa-luxut, luxud-u nuaN."
become-deer deer ox
變成鹿,鹿牛
變成鹿,乃是鹿鹿也。
變為鹿,是鹿鹿。
*to become a deer, a pygmy deer.*

22. tatu maumauwan, mahah mausai mahah dakho.
tatu maumauwan maxa mausay maxa-daxu.
male name then will go become-savage
男名於是要去當生番
不得已自去為生蕃也。
於是 Tatu Maumauwan 变成生蕃了。
*Tatu Maumauwan then became a savage.*

23. ayan nu ayan, saisaiya wilan.
ayan nu ayan saysay yawira.
everything end
全部結束
息唱，論至此可以也。
根源歌到此全部結束。
The song of ayan ends here.

全體意譯 (黃秀敏譯)：
來講故事。有名叫 Uba Pini（鳥肉比耳）和 Ada Pini（阿踏比耳）的兩兄弟，
沿溪上來，與 Tabanan（踏萬）長者相遇了。長者問曰，「要到哪兒去啊？」
兩人回答曰，「我們要去我們的地方當蕃人。」蕃人即東蕃，在日出的地方，
往北再往南。（在這裡中斷）

另外，有名叫 Tatu Maumauwan（踏蛛茅茅灣）和 Tau Maumauwan（投茅茅灣）
的兩人，在 Tabanan 的地方相遇，彼此交談。我們要去我們的地方當生蕃。
據說蕃即 Saraumaw（沙漏毛）蕃。長者聽到此非常傷心（傷心必須各自分居），
於是造橋，命名為美好。兩人要度過此橋時，Tau Maumauwan 滑落於橋下，Tatu Maumauwan 在橋上呼喚他，他對 Tatu Maumauwan 說，「你自己回去吧！我離去將變成鹿。」據說鹿即麋鹿。Tatu Maumauwan 不得已離開成為生蕃。又若講故事的話，大概如此。
三、開基之歌 The Song of Our Origin

1. aiyan nu aiyan, dauduwai laitäh.
   
   要論古代
   
   要講咱們的根源。
   
   In the song of ayan, we shall talk about (our origin).

2. apu-tia maha tadupurai, rubuhrubuh a kauwas.
   
   祖誰是以視察地下
   
   The old woman Tia inspected (the earth) below the sky.

3. kita kita siaun, durrusippi lapilach.
   
   她仔細地視察著, 發現大地是貧瘠如疥癬一般。
   
   She looked carefully to the extremes and it was all barren as if it had scabies.

4. mahah dudulluwai, apu magiauwas matah lak-kang kauwas,
   
   則差遣祖馬堯曰由天隙坐雲降下。
   
   Then the old woman Magiauwas was coming down through the space of the sky by riding the
clouds.
5. mahah kikiddehai, rubburubuh a kauwas.
maxa kii-kidih-ay ruburu a kawas.
Red-descend-Fut below sky
降下 下 天
故隨降下地面。
她降落到地面。
Then she descended to the earth.

6. kaduhu hauliak, ni apu-tiya.
kaduxu hauriak ni apu tia.
incantation very good old lady name
唸咒 好阿婆 女名
好法術祖知仔所賜的。
阿婆 Tia 唸咒。
The old woman Tia chanted incantations and it came out well.

7. maudadang daiya, mahah kaulah ngat-dai.
m<adadaN daya, maxa k<ulaNad-ay.
Prg-get warm east then Prg-name-Fut
變暖 東 然後 命名
黎明在東故要號名。
東方漸漸泛白，然後她要命名了。
The day was dawning in the east, and then she was to name it.

8. adamadang yi daiya mahah kaulangngat-dai.
adamadaN di daya, maxa k<ulaNad-ay.
name east then Prg-name-Fut
人名 東 然後 命名
（人名）在東故要號名。
AdamadaN 在東方，因此他要以此命名。
AdamadaN was in the east, and then she was to name it.

9. dahah-mat-dang yi daiya, mahakaulangatdai.
dahamadaN di daya, maxa k<ulaNad-ay.
name east then Prg-name-Fut
人名 東 然後 命名
（人名）在東故要號名。
DahamadaN was in the east, and then she was to name it.
10. **silapbang yi daiya, mahakaulangngatdai.**

SilabaN in the east, and then she was to name it.

11. **silapbang yi rhot, mahakaulangngatdai.**

SilabaN in the west, and then she was to name it.

12. **papak hahraruma-aih, mahahkaulangngatdai.**

It was made to be a bamboo sp., and then she was to name it.

13. **burrh mat-dang yi daiya.**

There was another bamboo sp. and dawn in the east.

14. **burrh mat-dang yi daiya, aunusasipudah rakihan tinnating.**

Sap竹黎明在東可以割臍帶，小孩赤子。
嫩竹和黎明在東方，此嫩竹可用來切斷（新生）嬰孩的臍帶。

The bamboo sp. and dawn in the east, and the bamboo was used to cut off the navel cord of a (new-born) baby.
15. hauliak kakatduhu ni apu-tia.
   hauriak ka-kaduxu ni apu tia.
   very good Red-chant incantation old lady name

   好哉法術，祖知仔之賜。
   幸好有阿婆 Tia 施咒。
   It was fortunate that the old lady Tia chanted incantations.

16. naghah-dah datduwa, di rubbuh rubbuh a kauwas.
   nahada dadua di ruburubu a kawas.
   have all below sky

   有 全部 下 空

   俱各有□ 在地下。
   萬物在天空之下生存。
   All (things) existed (on earth) under the sky.

17. uka kakka hukahui, uka sasumusumul.
   uka kaa-kahu-kahuy, uka ssa-sKmK-sKmKr.
   other Red-Red-tree other Red-Red-grass

   其他 樹 其他 草

   眾樹木類及眾草類
   有各種樹和草。
   There were all sorts of trees and grass.

18. aiya nu ayan, saisah ya wilan.
   ayan nu ayan, saysay yawira.
   根源 根源 全部 結束

   論至此可以也。
   根源歌到此全部結束。
   This is the end of the song ayan.

全體意譯（黃秀敏譯）：

    雖然講述往昔的面貌，但那是久遠以前的太空，我們的祖先名叫 Tia，是位俊傑。以手遮目遠遠的俯視大地，則是如何的遼闊，無邊無際地空虛，空無一物；這樣到底有誰去地面治理呢？仰著頭說：「Magiauwus。」今天一旦有遊
Appendix 2. The Lord's Prayer

The following material about Sek-hoan [Pazih] appears in Campbell (1896:102). It appears that Campbell was unaware of the great linguistic difference between Favorlang and Pazih, so that he inserted this Pazih material in Favorlang materials.

"The foregoing sheets had just been printed when a communication was received from Rev. D. Ferguson, M.A., of the English Presbyterian Mission in Formosa, which may be inserted here. It is dated Tainanfu, 31st March 1896, and was sent in reply to a request that he would have the Lord's Prayer written out in the language now spoken by the Toa-sia aborigines; Toa-sia being the name of a Township about fourteen miles north of the city of Chiang-hoa. Hundreds of families of this same tribe are also found among the villages of the Pawsia Plain, some two days' journey to the east of Chiang-hoa. The version he sends in is as follows:

The Lord's Prayer in the Present-day Sekhoan Dialect of Formosa"

1. Niam a A-bah kai-dih ba bau ka-wuss.
   niam a aba kaidi babaw kawas.
   our Lig Dad stay above sky
   我們的父在天上
   我們在天上的父啊。
   Our God is above in the heaven.

2. Ni-suh a la-ngat tsah, ma sü-zau-u hau riak.
   nisu a laNat ka, ma-sKzaw hau-riak.
   your Lig name Top Sta-clean very-good
   你的名乾淨很好

1 The following ten Pazih sentences were interpreted by Pan Jin-yu (female, 88) on March 27, 2002, edited and translated by Paul Li. In each sentence the first line in boldface is the original transcription given perhaps by Rev. D. Ferguson.
你的名字乾淨良好。
Your name is clean and very good.

3. Pa-pang-a-sai ni-suh-ah ki-n ü la-an.
   pa-paNasa-i nisu a k<in>ula?-an
   Cau-bring-imp your Lig Prf-lead-Loc
   帶 你的 引領的地方
   請引領我們到正確的地方（天國）。
   Please lead us to the right place (your kingdom).
4. Pa-pa i ta-du-i ki-ni-siu-a li-ni xa-dan, di-ni da-xüh, hai-ki, ba bau
pa-paitadu?i ki nisiw a l<i>xad-an, dini daxK haiki babaw
Cau-arrange-Imp Nom your Lig here earth like above
安排　主　你的　這裡　地　好像　上
ka-wuss.
kawas.
sky
天
安排得井然有序，在地上這裡就像在天上一般。
Put your ... in order, then this world is like the heaven.

baxa-i aunu dali nu nu saw.
give-Imp for day Gen Gen man
給　為　日　屬　人
請賞賜我們人們日常所需的（飲食）。
Please give us our daily needs (food and drinks).

6. ki-na-sa-de-lan yam-i-kah, i-la a na pi-ter-ü-t-o
k<i>n>a-sadial-an yami ka, ini pitKrKt u
Nmz-Prf-bad-Loc we Top not remember Obl
壞的地方　我們　不　記
ni-a-ki-na sa-de-lan.
niam a k<i>n>a-sadial-an.
our Lig Nmz-Prf-bad-Loc
我們　壞的地方
請赦免我們的罪惡，我們也將對有負於我們的人不計仇。
And forgive our sin, just as we will not remember those who have sinned against us.

an a papa-xtitalam-i yami a aidisaysay.
don't Cau-try-Imp we Lig all sorts of things
別　試　我們　的　各式各樣的事
不要讓牠試探我們各種東西。
Don't let him try on us all sorts of things.
8. **Tu-tul-i niam-mih pa-ter-ia-di de-sa-del.**
   tutul-i niam patKr lia di sadial.
   save?-Imp our hooked Asp Loc evil
   救? 我們 了 兇惡
   把我們從兇惡中解救出來。
   Save us from the evil.

9. **Hhamoh ki-nü la-an, wa-rüt xi-na ria-ria-kan, ka kai-i-swoan da-duah,**
   k<i>n>ula?-an warKt x<i>n>a-ria-ria-kan\(^2\) ka, kai-isuan dadua,
   Prf-lead-Loc capable XA-Prf-Red-good-Loc Conj stay-you/Loc all
   帶領好在全
   mau sei-o ma-si-lo ba-zu ba-zoach.
   mausay u ma-sirw bazu-bazuah.
   去穿同輩
   你做的好事都會跟著你，你的同輩也將會分享。
   For the good things you have done, they will all stay with you, and (your) peer group will go and get awarded.

10. **Lai-ki niam-a hi-niss-a xi-na la-tü-dan.**
    laiki niam a hinis a x<i>n>alatKd-an.
    in this way our Lig mind Lig Prf-origin-Loc
    如此 我們的心根源
    我們內心所想的就是如此。
    Deep in our mind is like this.

    ‘Mr. Ferguson remarks on the above; ...’A good many of the brethren helped in making this translation, especially A-sin, Hau-hi [xauxi]\(^3\), A-i-am, Ta-muli [damuri], Aw-hoan and Bau-keh [bauki]. Every petition is kept separate, and begins with a capital. The letter “ü” is pronounced as in German, “x” as in Greek, and “Hh” as a somewhat aspirated form of the single letter. Several words had to be translated in a roundabout way, as they have no such expressions as “kingdom,” “hallowed,” “glory,” “will,” and one or two others.”

---

\(^2\) In Ogawa’s unpublished field notes, he suggested the possibility of deriving this form from hauriak ‘very good’.

\(^3\) The forms in square brackets [ ] are given by Paul Li.
中文版如下：

在天我等父者  我等願爾名見聖
爾國臨格  爾旨成行於地如於天焉
我等望爾  今日與我   我日用糧
而免我債  如我亦（也）免負我債者
又不我許陷於誘惑乃救我於兇惡
Appendix 3. Pazih Sentences Recorded by Steere in 1873

The following sentences were recorded by Joseph Beal Steere in 1873. In each sentence the first line in boldface is the original transcription by Steere, while the second line is the edited version by Li. Where there is a discrepancy in our understanding of the Pazih sentence, the English gloss is given on the right of each sentence.

1. riáa kaliisú
   riak ka mulasu
   *Rice is good.*

2. haima áló paisú
   haima alaw pai siw?
   *How many fish do you have?*

3. nahádzá supátá áló yakó
   nahaza supad-a alaw yaku
   *I have four fish.*

4. Înlmará áló yakó
   ini mara alaw yaku.
   ‘I have no fish.’
   ‘I didn't catch (any) fish.’

5. sarawan mausai malúp yakó
   sarawan mausay malup yaku.
   *Tomorrow I will go hunting.*

6. okaijá Înlmalúp yakó
   ukazixa malup yaku.
   ‘Yesterday I went hunting.’
   ‘Yesterday I did not go hunting.’

7. sarawan káosá malúp Íssú
   sarawan mausay malup isiw.
   *Tomorrow you will go hunting.*

---

4 See Steere (1874:332-333), in which Pazih is called “Sek-whan”, but mistyped as “Lek-whan”. Steere’s original field notes are kept at the Bentley Historical Library, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor.

5 Actually the sentence means ‘yesterday-not-hunt-I = I did not go hunting yesterday.’
8. yákó mausai malúp
   yaku mausay malup.
   I am going hunting.

9. mausai marao alao yakó
   mausay mara u alau yaku.
   I am going fishing.

10. màké yakanun yakó
    makiakanKn yaku.
    I am hungry.

11. mausai paisu ‘Where are you going?’
    mausay pai siw? ‘Will you go?’
    mausay asay siw? ‘Where are you going?’

12. mausai Pofisíá yákó ‘I am going to Posia.’
    mausay purisia. ‘I'm going to Puli.’

13. si Pofisíá yákó ‘I have been in Posia.’
    di posia yaku. ‘I'm in Puli.’

14. murizáh húhúí.
    murizax xKxKl.
    ‘The sun is very hot.’

15. kasaián paiká dulaí ‘When will you start?’
    kasayan pai kadul-ay? ‘When will you set out?’

16. sasai íñííá
    sasayKn la?
    How must I do?

17. okaza kowás poréhat nakí abá íná
    ukazixa kawas purihat naki a abá ina.
    Last year my father and mother died.

18. okaza kowás poréhat nakí abá
    ukazixa kawas purihat naki a abá.
    Last year my father died.
19. pozáha oząng kəwás pówṝházaai nañi aña
puzah adang a kawas purihaday naki a aba.
My father will die next year.

20. okəjihá kəməkoun aláoo yakó
ukazixa ka mKkKən alaw yaku.
Yesterday I ate fish.

21. kakán aláoo yakó
kaakKən alaw yaku.
I am eating fish.

22. sarawán kakanai aláoo yakó
sarawan kaakanay alaw yaku.
Tomorrow I will eat fish.

23. okəjihá mədəuhy ou dalúum yakó
‘Yesterday I drank tea.’
ukazixa mudaux u dalum yaku. ‘Yesterday I drank water.’

24. dədəwoho dalúum yakó
daadaux dalum yaku.
I am drinking water.

25. sarawán ka dədəwuhyi dalúum yakó
sarawan ka dadauxay dalum yaku.
Tomorrow I will drink water.

26. məpuzá haimú
mupuzah haimu.
You(pl) have come.

27. mousai yamí ‘You are going.’
mausay yami. ‘We(exc) are going.’

28. mousái la ‘You wish to go.’
mausay la. ‘(I’m) leaving.’
Appendix 4. Sample of Previous Scholars' Notes on Pazih

(1) A Sample of Steere's (1873) Notes of Pazih Sentences
(2) A Sample of Ino's (1897) Notes of Pazih Text

小鳥は犬をつれて山に遊んで、「昼
Rubo Rubo binayu ha mafaze
Rehong De barabarud Rehong
igia ha, dah a
U Mama
FNR
山の下に川があり、その川の両側に多くの田と畑がある
kaizi kafa tabakah sao a marujawu
kaatku
かれにあたれの人が土をすきかへして居る
第 七 節

Ahowan a darse ina u kaofahi
-mo a Pahana kha pazahio u
Rehong,
多暮に荷を積んだ船が川を下り行く
ufa de muyamia binayu a daran
ka totarao noang a kaofahi,
又あらの山稜を小鳥が牛を遂て行く
Noang ha muzakua u sugumai
Panada a muhalid u paibuari
A Sample of Ogawa or Ino's Handwriting of Ai-yan

(3) A Sample of Ogawa or Ino's Handwriting of Ai-yan

[Handwritten text shown here]
(4) A Sample of Asai's (1936) Notes of Pazih Texts